
Ancestors of "James V" James

Generation 1

1. **"James V" James** (son of "James of Scotland" James and Margaret Tudor) was born in 1513. He died on Dec 15, 1542 in Faulkland Palace, Scotland. He married **Mary de Guise**. She was born in Nov 1515 in Bar-le-Duc, Duchy of Lorraine. She died on Jun 11, 1560 in Edinburgh Castle, Edinburgh, Kingdom of Scotland.

Notes for "James V" James:

James V was King of Scots. He was born April 10, 1512, and lived until December 12, 1542, only living to the age of 30. His ancestry is quite extensive. Out information associated with James V goes back 50 generations to Godwulf, a Norwegian Viking born an estimated 80 AD

James' death followed the Scottish defeat at the [Battle of Solway Moss](#). His only surviving legitimate child, [Mary](#), succeeded him when she was just six days old. She became known as Mary Queen of Scots.

James was son of King [James IV of Scotland](#) and his wife [Margaret Tudor](#), a daughter of [Henry VII of England](#) and sister of Henry VIII, and was the only legitimate child of James IV to survive infancy. He was born on 10 April 1512 at [Linlithgow Palace, Linlithgowshire](#) and baptized the following day, receiving the titles [Duke of Rothesay](#) and [Prince and Great Steward of Scotland](#). He became king at just seventeen months old when his father was killed at the [Battle of Flodden Field](#) on 9 September 1513.

James was crowned in the Chapel Royal at [Stirling Castle](#) on 21 September 1513. During his childhood the country was ruled by regents, first by his mother, until she remarried the following year, and then by [John Stewart, 2nd Duke of Albany](#), next in line to the Crown after James and his younger brother, the posthumously-born [Alexander Stewart, Duke of Ross](#), who died in infancy. Other regents included [Robert Maxwell, 5th Lord Maxwell](#), a member of the [Council of Regency](#) who was also bestowed as Regent of [Arran](#), the largest island in the Firth of Clyde. In February 1517 James came from Stirling to [Holyroodhouse](#), Edinburgh, but during an outbreak of plague in the city he was moved to the care of [Antoine d'Arces](#) at nearby rural [Craigmillar Castle](#). At Stirling, the 10-year-old James had a guard of 20 footmen dressed in his colours, red and yellow. When he went to the park below the Castle, "by secret and in right fair and soft wedder (weather)," six horsemen would scour the countryside two miles roundabout for intruders. Poets wrote their own nursery rhymes for James and advised him on royal behavior. As a youth, his education was in the care of [University of St Andrews](#) poets such as [Sir David Lyndsay](#). [William Stewart](#), in his poem *Princelie Majestie*, counselled James against ice-skating:

To princes als it is ane vyce,
To ryd or run over rakleslie,
Or aventure to go on yce,
Accordis nacho to thy majesty.

In the autumn of 1524 James dismissed his regents and was proclaimed an adult ruler by his mother. Several new court servants were appointed including a trumpeter, Henry Rudeman. [Thomas Magnus](#), the English diplomat, gave an impression of the new Scottish court at Holyroodhouse on [All Saints' Day](#) 1524: "trumpets and [shamulles](#) did sounde and blew up mooste pleasauntely." Magnus saw the young king singing, playing with a spear at [Leith](#), and with his horses, and he was given the impression that the king preferred English manners over French fashions.

In 1525 [Archibald Douglas, 6th Earl of Angus](#), the young king's stepfather, took custody of James and held him as a virtual prisoner for three years, exercising power on his behalf. There were several attempts made to free the young King – one by [Walter Scott of Branxholme and Buccleuch](#), who ambushed the King's forces on 25 July 1526 at the battle

Ancestors of "James V" James

of Melrose, and was routed off the field. Another attempt later that year, on 4 September at the [battle of Linlithgow Bridge](#), failed again to relieve the King from the clutches of Angus. When James and his mother came to Edinburgh on 20 November 1526, she stayed in the chambers at Holyroodhouse, which Albany had used, James using the rooms above. In February 1527 [Henry Fitzroy, Duke of Richmond](#), gave James twenty hunting hounds and a huntsman. Magnus thought the Scottish servant sent to [Sheriff Hutton Castle](#) for the dogs was intended to note the form and fashion of the Duke's household, for emulation in Scotland. James finally escaped from Angus's care in 1528 and assumed the reins of government himself.

According to legend James was nicknamed "King of the Commons" as he would sometimes travel around Scotland disguised as a common man, describing himself as the "Gudemane of Ballengeich" ('Gudemane' means 'landlord' or 'farmer', and 'Ballengeich' was the nickname of a road next to [Stirling Castle](#) – meaning 'windy pass' in [Gaelic](#)). James was also a keen [lute](#) player. In 1562 Sir Thomas Wood reported that James had "a singular good ear and could sing that he had never seen before" ([sight-read](#)), but his voice was "rawky" and "harske." At court, James maintained a band of Italian musicians who adopted the name Drummond. These were joined for the winter of 1529/30 by a musician and diplomat sent by the [Duke of Milan](#), Thomas de Averencia de [Brescia](#), probably a [lutenist](#). The historian Andrea Thomas makes a useful distinction between the loud music provided at ceremonies and processions and instruments employed for more private occasions or worship; the *music fyne* described by Helena Mennie Shire. This quieter music included a consort of [viols](#) played by four Frenchmen led by Jacques Columbelle. It seems certain that [David Peebles](#) wrote music for James V and probable that the Scottish composer [Robert Carver](#) was in royal employ, though evidence is lacking.

As a patron of poets and authors James supported [William Stewart](#) and [John Bellenden](#), the son of his nurse, who translated the Latin *History of Scotland* compiled in 1527 by [Hector Boece](#) into verse and prose. [Sir David Lindsay of the Mount](#), the [Lord Lyon](#), head of the [Lyon Court](#) and diplomat, was a prolific poet. He produced an interlude at Linlithgow Palace thought to be a version of his play *The Thrie Estaitis* in 1540. James also attracted the attention of international authors.

The death of James's mother in 1541 removed any incentive for peace with England, and war broke out. Initially the Scots won a victory at the [Battle of Haddon Rig](#) in August 1542. The Imperial ambassador in London, [Eustace Chapuys](#), wrote on 2 October that the Scottish ambassadors ruled out a conciliatory meeting between James and Henry VIII in England until the pregnant Mary of Guise delivered her child. Henry would not accept this condition and mobilised his army against Scotland.

James was with his army at [Lauder](#) on 31 October 1542. Although he hoped to invade England, his nobles were reluctant. He returned to Edinburgh, on the way writing a letter in French to his wife from Falahill mentioning he had three days of illness. The next month his army suffered a serious defeat at the [Battle of Solway Moss](#). He took ill shortly after this, on 6 December; by some accounts this was a nervous collapse caused by the defeat, and he may have died from the grief, although some historians consider that it may just have been an ordinary fever. [John Knox](#) later described his final movements in Fife.

Whatever the cause of his illness, James was on his deathbed at [Falkland Palace](#) when his only surviving legitimate child, a girl, was born. Sir [George Douglas of Pittendreich](#) brought the news of the king's death to Berwick. He said James died at midnight on Thursday 15 December; the king was talking but delirious and spoke no "wise words." According to George Douglas in his delirium James lamented the capture of his banner and [Oliver Sinclair](#) at Solway Moss more than his other losses. An English chronicler suggested another cause of the king's grief was his discomfort on hearing of the murder of the English [Somerset Herald](#), [Thomas Trahern](#), at [Dunbar](#). James was buried at [Holyrood Abbey](#) in Edinburgh.

Before he died he is reported to have said "it came wi a lass, it'll gang wi a lass" (meaning

Ancestors of "James V" James

"It began with a girl and it will end with a girl"). This was either a reference to the [Stewart dynasty's](#) accession to the throne through [Marjorie Bruce](#), daughter of [Robert the Bruce](#) or to the medieval origin myth of the Scots nation, recorded in the [Scotichronicon](#) in which the Scots people are descended from the Princess [Scota](#).

James was succeeded by his infant daughter Mary. He was buried at [Holyrood Abbey](#) alongside his first wife [Madeleine](#) and his two sons in January 1543. David Lindsay supervised the construction of his tomb. One of his French artists, [Andrew Mansioun](#), carved a lion and an inscription in [Roman letters](#) measuring eighteen feet. The tomb was destroyed in the sixteenth century, according to [William Drummond of Hawthornden](#) as early as 1544, by the English during the [burning of Edinburgh](#). Scotland was ruled by [Regent Arran](#) and was soon drawn into the war of the [Rough Wooing](#).

Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_V_of_Scotland

Notes for Mary de Guise:

Mary of Guise ([French: Marie de Guise](#); 22 November 1515 – 11 June 1560) was [Queen consort of Scotland](#) from 1538 to 1542 as the second wife of [King James V](#). She was the mother of [Mary, Queen of Scots](#), and served as [Regent of Scotland](#) in her daughter's name from 1554 to 1560. A native of [Lorraine](#), she was a member of the powerful [House of Guise](#), which played a prominent role in 16th-century French politics. Her main goal was a close alliance between the powerful French Catholic nation and smaller Scotland, which she wanted to be Catholic and independent of England. She failed, and at her death the Protestants took control of Scotland, with her own grandson achieving the [Union of the Crowns](#) a few decades later.

Her Christian faith was that of the Roman Catholic Church.

Source: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mary_of_Guise

Generation 2

2. **"James of Scotland" James** He died on Sep 09, 1513 in Flodden Field. He married **Margaret Tudor** (daughter of Henry VII and Elizabeth "Elizabeth of York" Plantagenet) on Aug 08, 1503 in Holyrood House.
3. **Margaret Tudor** (daughter of Henry VII and Elizabeth "Elizabeth of York" Plantagenet) was born on Nov 28, 1489. She died on Oct 18, 1541.

Notes for Margaret Tudor:

"Margaret Tudor was the first daughter born to Henry VII and Elizabeth of York. She was married to James IV of Scotland on 8 August, 1503 at Holyrood House. It was because of this union that England and Scotland would be united under one crown 100 years later at the death of Elizabeth I in 1603.

"Margaret was apparently not happy in her early days in Scotland, as is evident in a letter she wrote to her father, Henry VII. The two different handwritings in the letter are because the top part was written by a secretary, while the last section was in Margaret's own hand.

"James died at Flodden Field 9 September 1513. When James IV died, Margaret's infant son became James V.

"John Stuart, Duke of Albany, used the Scottish Lord's distrust of Margaret to make himself regent and sent the Queen to flee to England in 1516 with her second husband, Archibald

Ancestors of "James V" James

Douglas, the Earl of Angus, whom she had married in 1514.

"The marriage with the Earl was dissolved in 1527. The couple had a daughter, Margaret Douglas, who was the mother of Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley.

"Margaret Tudor took a third husband in 1528 - Henry Stewart, Lord Methven."

Source: <http://tudorhistory.org/people/margaret/>

Generation 3

6. **Henry VII** (son of Edmund "1st Earl of Richmond" Tudor and Margaret Beaufort) was born on Jan 28, 1457 in Pembroke Castle in Wales. He died on Apr 21, 1509. He married **Elizabeth "Elizabeth of York" Plantagenet** (daughter of Edward IV and Elizabeth Woodville) on Jan 18, 1486 in Westminster Abbey, Westminster, London, England.
7. **Elizabeth "Elizabeth of York" Plantagenet** (daughter of Edward IV and Elizabeth Woodville) was born on Feb 11, 1466 in Westminster Palace, Westminster, London, England. She died on Feb 11, 1503.

Notes for Henry VII:

English King Henry VII was born January 28, 1457 at Pembroke Castle, Pembrokeshire, Wales. He died April 21, 1509 at Richmond Palace, Surrey, England (age 52). His burial was May 11, 1509 at Westminster Abbey, London.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Henry_VII_of_England

This King Henry VII is the 18th cousin, 15 times removed to me. He was the first in the line of the Kings of the House of Tudor. Henry VII, who was son of Edmund Tudor and Margaret Beaufort, was born January 28, 1457. Henry married Elizabeth of York (Elizabeth Plantagenet) in 1486, who bore him four children: Arthur, Henry, Margaret and Mary. Henry died in 1509 after reigning 24 years. Their son, Henry VIII was the brother-in-law of William Carey through Henry's second of six wives, Anne Boleyn. William is my 21st cousin, twelve times removed.

Henry VII is the husband of 2nd cousin 6x removed of Edward Carlton, the husband of Ellen Newton, the stepdaughter of my 6th great grand uncle.

Henry descended from John of Gaunt, through the latter's illicit affair with Catherine Swynford; although he was a Lancastrian, he gained the throne through personal battle. The Lancastrian victory at the Battle of Bosworth in 1485 left Richard III slain in the field, York ambitions routed and Henry proclaimed king. From the onset of his reign, Henry was determined to bring order to England after 85 years of civil war. His marriage to Elizabeth of York combined both the Lancaster and York factions within the Tudor line, eliminating further discord about succession. He faced two insurrections during his reign, each centered around "pretenders" who claimed a closer dynastic link to the Plantagenets than Henry. Lambert Simnel posed as the Earl of Warwick, but his army was defeated and he was eventually pardoned and forced to work in the king's kitchen. Perkin Warbeck posed as Richard of York, Edward V's younger brother (and co-prisoner in the Tower of London); Warbeck's support came from the continent, and after repeated invasion attempts, Henry had him imprisoned and executed.

Henry greatly strengthened the monarchy by employing many political innovations to outmaneuver the nobility. The household staff rose beyond mere servitude: Henry eschewed public appearances, therefore, staff members were the few persons Henry saw on a regular basis. He created the Committee of the Privy Council, a forerunner of the modern cabinet) as an executive advisory board; he established the Court of the Star

Ancestors of "James V" James

Chamber to increase royal involvement in civil and criminal cases; and as an alternative to a revenue tax disbursement from Parliament, he imposed forced loans and grants on the nobility. Henry's mistrust of the nobility derived from his experiences in the Wars of the Roses - a majority remained dangerously neutral until the very end. His skill at by-passing Parliament (and thus, the will of the nobility) played a crucial role in his success at renovating government.

On March 5, 1496, King Henry VII issued letters patent to John Cabot and his sons, authorizing them to explore unknown lands. **John Cabot** (Italian: *Giovanni Caboto*; c. 1450 – c. 1500) was a Venetian navigator and explorer whose 1497 discovery of the coast of North America under King Henry's commission led the first European exploration of coastal North America since the Norse visits to Vinland in the eleventh century. To mark the celebration of the 500th anniversary of Cabot's expedition, both the Canadian and British governments elected Cape Bonavista, Newfoundland, as representing Cabot's first landing site.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Cabot

Henry's political acumen was also evident in his handling of foreign affairs. He played Spain off of France by arranging the marriage of his eldest son, Arthur, to Catherine of Aragon, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella. Arthur died within months and Henry secured a papal dispensation for Catherine to marry Arthur's brother, the future Henry VIII; this single event had the widest-ranging effect of all Henry's actions: Henry VIII's annulment from Catherine was the impetus for the separation of the Church of England from the body of Roman Catholicism. The marriage of Henry's daughter, Margaret, to James IV of Scotland would also have later repercussions, as the marriage connected the royal families of both England and Scotland, leading the Stuarts to the throne after the extinction of the Tudor dynasty. Henry encouraged trade and commerce by subsidizing ship building and entering into lucrative trade agreements, thereby increasing the wealth of both crown and nation.

Henry failed to appeal to the general populace: he maintained a distance between king and subject. He brought the nobility to heel out of necessity to transform the medieval government that he inherited into an efficient tool for conducting royal business. Law and trade replaced feudal obligation as the Middle Ages began evolving into the modern world. Francis Bacon, in his history of Henry VII, described the king as such: "He was of a high mind, and loved his own will and his own way; as one that revered himself, and would reign indeed. Had he been a private man he would have been termed proud: But in a wise Prince, it was but keeping of distance; which indeed he did towards all; not admitting any near or full approach either to his power or to his secrets. For he was governed by none."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon40.html>

Notes for Elizabeth "Elizabeth of York" Plantagenet:

"Elizabeth of York was born at Westminster on 11 Feb 1465, and she died giving birth to a dau. on her birthday in 1503. She was the daughter of Edward IV and Elizabeth Woodville. Born into one of the houses caught in the struggle that would later so eloquently be called 'The Wars of the Roses,' one would think that she had a difficult childhood. In fact, she was living a pleasantly secure life until the death of her father in 1483. When she was five years old she was to have married George Neville, eldest son of John, Earl of Northumberland, later Marquis of Montagu, and Neville was created Duke of Bedford, but his father switched sides against the King, Bedford was deprived of all his titles and Elizabeth's betrothal was cancelled. In 1475 Edward planned to marry her to Louis, the French Dauphin, but Edward soon discovered that Louis had no intention of keeping his obligations and therefore the engagement was broken off. Bernard André, the blind poet laureate and historian, hints that Edward offered Elizabeth to Henry of Richmond, but that Henry declined, suspecting that the offer was a trap to put him into the King's power.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"However, when Edward IV died, things took a decidedly bad turn. Elizabeth Woodville wanted her young son, now Edward V to go to London with a strong army, but her wishes were not honored. So, when he set out with just the usual attendants, it was easy for his uncle Richard, Duke of Gloucester to intercept the caravan and take the young King to the palace lodgings in the Tower of London.

"Elizabeth Woodville must have distrusted this move by Richard, since she took her remaining son Richard, the Duke of York, and her six daughters to Westminster Abbey. However, Elizabeth was convinced to let Richard join his brother at the Tower (on the premise that the young King was lonely) under the protection of Richard. It was at this time that the young princes (technically a King and a prince) disappeared, and the Lord Protector, brother of the late Edward IV became King Richard III.

"Elizabeth's mother now made a plan, together with Margaret Beaufort, to marry their two children, Henry and Elizabeth. On Christmas Day, 1483, at the cathedral of Rennes in Brittany, where he was in exile, Henry Tudor swore to marry Elizabeth as soon as he had secured the throne.

"Richard III, of course, was determined to stop such a scheme being put into operation. The Titulus Regius is simply the document in which Richard laid out his claim to the throne. Briefly, the case is this: that Richard's brother, Edward IV, had made a troth-plight with Lady Eleanor Butler, and then, while Lady Eleanor was still alive, had married Elizabeth Woodville, thus making the children of the marriage illegitimate, thus invalidating their claim to the throne, thus making Richard the rightful King.

"When Richard III's wife died in 1485 he proposed to marry Elizabeth himself. Luckily, his advisers persuaded him to drop this strange notion.

"When Henry of Richmond landed at Milford Haven, Elizabeth was sent to safe keeping at Sheriff Hutton, near York, deep in the heart of Gloucester country. Henry's victory at Bosworth meant Elizabeth's release and her journey to London to meet the man she was to marry.

"Henry delayed the wedding for a number of months, possibly because he wished to make it quite clear that he was King of England in his own right and not because he was marrying the heiress of Edward IV, but probably also for simple practical reasons. Parliament was impatient of the delay and before Christmas 1485 the Commons urged him to honour his pledge. So, on 18 Jan 1486, having acquired the necessary papal dispensation, the marriage was solemnized. Thus the two royal houses - York and Lancaster - were finally united. Their marriage symbolically brought an end to the Wars of the Roses (although rebellions would spring up during Henry's reign) and was responsible for the creation of the Tudor Rose - the joining of the white rose of York and the red rose of Lancaster.

"Elizabeth is one of the least important, though not the least attractive, of the Queens of England. Little is known about her. Whatever evidence there is suggests that the relations between Henry VII and his Queen were happy. Of Elizabeth and Henry's seven children, four survived childhood: Arthur, Margaret, Henry and Mary.

Source: <http://www.tudorplace.com.ar/aboutElizabethofYork.htm>

Generation 4

12. **Edmund "1st Earl of Richmond" Tudor** (son of Owen ap Maredudd ap Tudur and "Catherine of Valois" Catherine) was born about 1435. He died in Nov 1456. He married **Margaret Beaufort**.
13. **Margaret Beaufort** (daughter of John Beaufort) was born on May 31, 1443. She died on Jun 29, 1509.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Notes for Margaret Beaufort:

Margaret was a descendant of King Edward III. She is my 18th cousin, 15 times removed.

Source:<http://tudorhistory.org/henry7/>

"During the Middle Ages ladies were associated with the Order (of the Garter), although unlike today they did not enjoy full membership. One of the last medieval ladies to be honoured was Lady Margaret Beaufort, mother of Henry VII and grandmother of Henry VIII. After her death in 1509 the Order remained exclusively male, except for reigning queens as Sovereign of the Order, until 1901 when Edward VII made Queen Alexandra a lady of the Order."

Source:<http://www.royal.gov.uk/output/page490.asp>

14. **Edward IV** (son of Richard "3rd Duke of York" Plantagenet and Cecily Neville) was born on Apr 28, 1442. He died on Apr 09, 1483 in Westminster, London, England. He married **Elizabeth Woodville** (daughter of Richard Wydevill and Jacquetta de Luxembourg) on May 01, 1464.
15. **Elizabeth Woodville** (daughter of Richard Wydevill and Jacquetta de Luxembourg) was born about 1437 in Grafton Regis, Northamptonshire County, England. She died on Jun 08, 1492.

Notes for Edward IV:

"Edward of York was born on April 28, 1442, at Rouen in France, the second son of Richard Plantagenet, 3rd Duke of York (a leading claimant to the throne of England) and Cecily Neville. He was the eldest of the four sons who survived to adulthood. York's challenge to the ruling family marked the beginning of the conflict known as the Wars of the Roses. When his father was killed in 1460, at the Battle of Wakefield, pressing his claim against the Lancastrian king, Henry VI of England, Edward inherited his claim.

King Edward IV is my 19th cousin, 14 times removed. Our ancestors in common are Eystein Glumra Ivarsson and his wife, Aseda Rognvaldsdatter. They are ninth century Vikings of Norway.

"With the support of Richard Neville, 16th Earl of Warwick ("The Kingmaker"), Edward, already showing great promise as a leader of men, defeated the Lancastrians in a succession of battles. While Henry and his militant queen, Margaret of Anjou, were campaigning in the north, Warwick gained control of the capital and had Edward declared king in London in 1461. Edward strengthened his claim with a decisive victory at the Battle of Towton in the same year, in the course of which the Lancastrian army was virtually wiped out.

"Edward was tall, strong, handsome, affable (even with subjects), generous, and popular. Warwick, believing that he could continue to rule through him, pressed him to enter into a marital alliance with a major European power. Edward, who had appeared to go along with the wishes of his mentor, then alienated Warwick by secretly marrying a widow, Elizabeth Woodville (possibly, as speculated by contemporary rumor, having previously married another widow, Lady Eleanor Talbot, even more secretly). Elizabeth had a large group of relatively poor, but very ambitious, followers and until the Battle of Towton, Lancastrian relations. While it is true that these relations did dominate the marriage market and were given numerous titles, they were given little land which was the true source of power and thus were not a threat to Warwick's own power. However, Warwick resented the influence they had over the King and was angry at the emergence of a rival group for the King's favor, so with the aid of Edward's disaffected younger brother George, Duke of Clarence, the Earl led an army against Edward.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"The main part of the king's army (without Edward) was defeated at the Battle of Edgecote Moor, and Edward was subsequently captured at Olney. Warwick's forces did capture Edward's father-in-law Richard Wydeville and brother-in-law John Wydeville after the battle at Chepstow and had them beheaded at Kenilworth on August 12, 1469 on false charges.

"Warwick then attempted to rule in Edward's name, but the nobility, many of whom owed their preferments to the king, were restive. With the emergence of a rebellion, Warwick was forced to release Edward. Edward did not seek to destroy either Warwick or Clarence, instead seeking reconciliation with them. However, shortly afterwards Warwick and Clarence rebelled again. After a failed rebellion in 1470, Warwick and Clarence were forced to flee to France. There, they made an alliance with the wife of Henry VI, Margaret of Anjou, and he agreed to restore Henry VI in return for French support in an invasion which took place in 1470. This time, Edward was forced to flee when he learned Warwick's brother, John Neville, 1st Marquess of Montagu, had also switched to the Lancastrian side, making his military position untenable.

"Henry VI was briefly restored to the throne in an act known as the Readeption (*regaining; recovery of something lost*) of Henry VI, and Edward took refuge in Burgundy. The rulers of Burgundy were his brother-in-law Charles, Duke of Burgundy and his sister Margaret of York. Despite the fact that Charles was initially unwilling to help Edward, the French declared war on Burgundy and so Charles decided to give his aid to Edward, and from there he raised an army to win back his kingdom.

"When he returned to England with a relatively small force he avoided capture by potentially hostile forces by stating his claim, just as Henry Bolingbroke had done seventy years earlier, that he merely desired to reclaim his dukedom. The city of York however closed its gates to him, but as he marched southwards he began to gather support, and Clarence (who had realized that his fortunes would be better off as brother to a king than under Henry VI) reunited with him. Edward defeated Warwick at the Battle of Barnet. With Warwick dead, he eliminated the remaining Lancastrian resistance at the Battle of Tewkesbury in 1471. The Lancastrian heir, Edward of Westminster, Prince of Wales, was killed either on the battlefield or shortly afterwards, and a few days later, on the night that Edward re-entered London, Henry VI, who was being held prisoner, was murdered in order to completely remove the Lancastrian opposition.

"Edward's two younger brothers, George, Duke of Clarence, and Richard, Duke of Gloucester (later King Richard III of England) were married to Isabella Neville and Anne Neville. They were both daughters of Warwick by Anne Beauchamp and rival heirs to the considerable inheritance of their still-living mother. Clarence and Gloucester were at logger heads for much of the rest of his reign. Clarence was eventually found guilty of plotting against Edward and was imprisoned in the Tower of London. He was "privately executed" (later tradition states he drowned in a vat of Malmsey wine) on February 18, 1478.

"Edward did not face any further rebellions after his restoration, as the Lancastrian line had virtually been extinguished, and the only rival left was Henry Tudor, who was living in exile. Edward declared war on France in 1475, and came to terms with the Treaty of Picquigny, which provided him with an immediate payment of 75,000 crowns and a yearly pension thereafter of 50,000 crowns. Edward backed an attempt by Alexander Stewart, 1st Duke of Albany, brother of the Scottish king James III to take the throne in 1482, and despite the fact that when Gloucester invaded he was able to capture Edinburgh and James III, Albany reneged on his agreement with Edward, and Gloucester decided to withdraw from his position of strength in Edinburgh. However, Gloucester did acquire the recovery of Berwick-upon-Tweed.

"Edward fell ill at Easter 1483, but lingered on long enough to add some codicils to his will, the most important being his naming of his brother, Gloucester, as Protector after his death. He died on 9 April 1483 and is buried in St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle. He was succeeded by his twelve-year-old son, Edward V of England."

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Edward_IV_of_England

"Windsor Castle England has changed hands numerous times over the years, but it was King Edward IV in the 15th century who transformed Windsor Castle from a fortress to a true royal residence. The impressive Lady Chapel was added to the castle at this time and marked the beginning of a new era of construction and purpose for Windsor Castle."

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

Notes for Elizabeth Woodville:

"Elizabeth Woodville or Wydville was the Queen consort of King Edward IV of England from 1464 until his death in 1483.

She was born circa 1437 at Grafton Regis, Northamptonshire, the daughter of Sir Richard Woodville (later made first Earl Rivers) and Jacquetta of Luxembourg. She was a maid of honor to Margaret of Anjou, Queen of Henry VI. In about 1452, she married Sir John Grey, 7th Baron Ferrers of Groby, who was killed at the Second Battle of St. Albans in 1461, fighting for the Lancastrian cause. (This was ironic, as Edward IV was the Yorkist claimant to the throne.) Elizabeth had two sons from the marriage, Thomas (later Marquess of Dorset) and Richard.

"Edward IV had many mistresses, the most notorious being Jane Shore, but Elizabeth insisted on marriage, which took place secretly [with only the bride's mother and two ladies in attendance] on May 1, 1464, at her family home in Northamptonshire. At the time, Edward's adviser, Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick, was negotiating a marriage alliance with France. When the marriage to Elizabeth Woodville became common knowledge, it was the cause of considerable rancor on Warwick's part, and when Elizabeth's relatives, especially her brother, Earl Rivers, began to be favored over him, he changed sides.

"Nor was Warwick the only one who resented the way the queen's relatives scooped up favors and lucrative opportunities; in 1480, for example, when Elizabeth's obscure brother-in-law, Sir Anthony Grey, died, he was interred in St Albans Cathedral with a brass marker to rival the one for that abbey's greatest archbishop. That was nothing compared to the marriages the queen arranged for her family, the most outrageous being when her 20-year-old brother, John Woodville, married Lady Katherine Neville, daughter of Ralph Neville, 1st Earl of Westmorland by Joan Beaufort, widow of John Mowbray, 2nd Duke of Norfolk and dowager Duchess of Norfolk. Katherine had been widowed three times and was nearly 80 years old but very wealthy. The queen also married her sister, Catherine Woodville, to her 11-year-old ward Henry Stafford, 2nd Duke of Buckingham. Another sister, Mary Woodville, married William Herbert, 2nd Earl of Pembroke.

"Elizabeth and Edward's marriage had produced ten children, including two sons who were still living at the time of the king's sudden death in 1483. The elder, Edward, had been born in sanctuary at Westminster Abbey in 1470, during the period when Edward IV was out of power during the Wars of the Roses. Elizabeth now, briefly, became Queen Mother, but on June 25, 1483, her marriage was declared null and void by Parliament in the act Titulus Regius on the grounds that Edward had previously promised to marry Lady Eleanor Butler, which was considered a legally binding contract that rendered any other marriage contract invalid as bigamous. (It was said that Eleanor Butler had done the same thing Elizabeth Woodville did later: A widow who caught Edward's eye, she refused to give in to him until he promised to marry her.) This information came to the fore when a priest (believed to be Robert Stillington, Bishop of Bath and Wells), testified that he had carried out the ceremony.

"On the basis of his evidence, all Elizabeth's children by Edward, including King Edward V, were declared illegitimate, and her brother-in-law, Richard III, accepted the crown and kept the two princes in the Tower of London, where they had already been lodged to await the coronation. The exact fate of the so-called Princes in the Tower is unknown, but both were

Ancestors of "James V" James

dead in this or the next reign. Elizabeth now lost the title of Queen Mother, and was referred to as Dame Elizabeth Grey. She and her other children were in sanctuary again, fearing for their safety. This may have been to protect themselves against jealous courtiers who wanted their own back on the entire Woodville clan.

"Elizabeth then conspired with Lancastrians, promising to marry her eldest daughter, Elizabeth of York, to the Lancastrian claimant to the throne, Henry Tudor (later King Henry VII), if he could supplant Richard. Following Henry's accession in 1485, Elizabeth Woodville's marriage to Edward IV was declared to have been valid, and thus their children were once again legitimized (because Henry wanted his wife to be the Yorkist heir to the throne, to cement his hold on it). At this point, Elizabeth was accorded the title of Queen Dowager. She died on June 8, at Bermondsey in London and was buried on June 12 in the same chantry as her husband King Edward in St George's Chapel in Windsor Castle."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elizabeth_Woodville

Generation 5

24. **Owen ap Maredudd ap Tudur** was born about 1400. He died in 1461. He married **"Catherine of Valois" Catherine** (daughter of Charles and Isabeau de Bavière) between 1431-1432.
25. **"Catherine of Valois" Catherine** (daughter of Charles and Isabeau de Bavière) was born on Oct 27, 1401 in Paris, France. She died on Jan 03, 1437 in London, England.

Notes for Owen ap Maredudd ap Tudur:

Owen Tudor, a Welsh courtier, would become the founding father of the Tudor Dynasty. Owen Tudor, lived on until 1461, when he was executed by the Yorkists following the Battle of Mortimer's Cross.

Notes for "Catherine of Valois" Catherine:

Just about one year prior to Catherine's birth, on October 25, 1400, Geoffrey Chaucer English author, poet, philosopher, bureaucrat (courtier), and a diplomat, died in London. Although he wrote many works he is best remembered for his unfinished frame narrative "The Canterbury Tales."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geoffrey_Chaucer

"Katherine of Valois was the daughter of King Charles VI of France and his wife Isabelle of Bavaria. She was born at the Hotel of St. Pol (royal palace in Paris) on October 27, 1401. Early on there had been a discussion of marrying her to the son of Henry IV, but the King died before negotiations could begin. The new king, Henry V, also proposed the match, but demanded a large dowry and acknowledgement of his right to the throne of France."

Source:<http://tudorhistory.org/topics/owen.html>

"Catherine of Valois was crowned Queen of England at Westminster Abbey in February, 1421. The only issue of Catherine and Henry, the future Henry VI of England, was born on 6 December 1421. Then Henry V suddenly died on 31 August 1422.

"Catherine was given Wallingford Castle, but effectively exiled from court, suspicion falling on her nationality. The regents kept her away from her child, and she turned for comfort to Owen Tudor, a Welsh courtier, who would become the founding father of the Tudor dynasty. In 1428 Parliament reacted to the rumors about this relationship by forbidding Catherine from marrying without consent of the king and the council. Historians are divided on whether Catherine had already married Owen Tudor before that Act of Parliament, or

Ancestors of "James V" James

whether they married secretly in 1429, or whether they married at all (some have suggested that this was a morganatic marriage). Although Catherine was forbidden to marry, there was a general lack of interest in her on the part of the authorities.

"In any case, she gave birth to at least five of Owen Tudor's children. One daughter died in infancy and another daughter and three sons survived. One son Owen became a monk. Their other two sons, Edmund Tudor, 1st Earl of Richmond and Jasper Tudor, 1st Duke of Bedford, were to play an important role in the future of the English monarchy.

"Catherine died on January 3, 1437, in London, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. Her husband or lover, Owen Tudor, lived on until 1461, when he was executed by the Yorkists following the Battle of Mortimer's Cross. Their sons were given earldoms by King Henry VI after Catherine's death. Edmund would become the father of the future King Henry VII of England."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Catherine_of_Valois

26. **John Beaufort** (son of "John of Gaunt" John and Katherine Swynford) was born in 1404. He died on May 27, 1444.
28. **Richard "3rd Duke of York" Plantagenet** was born on Sep 21, 1411. He died on Dec 30, 1460. He married **Cecily Neville**.
29. **Cecily Neville**

Notes for Richard "3rd Duke of York" Plantagenet:

My relationship to Richard is through his wife, Cecily Neville, who is my 18th cousin, three times removed.

"Richard Plantagenet, 3rd Duke of York, was a member of the English royal family, who served in senior positions in France at the end of the Hundred Years' War, and in England during Henry VI's madness. His conflict with Henry VI was a leading factor in the political upheaval of mid-fifteenth-century England, and a major cause of the Wars of the Roses. Although he never became king, he was the father of Edward IV and Richard III."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richard_Plantagenet%2C_3rd_Duke_of_York

Notes for Cecily Neville:

Cecily Neville is my 18th cousin, three times removed.

30. **Richard Wydevill** He married **Jacquetta de Luxembourg**.
31. **Jacquetta de Luxembourg** was born about 1416. She died on May 30, 1472.

Generation 6

50. **Charles** (son of Charles and Jeanne de Bourbon) was born on Dec 03, 1368. He died on Oct 21, 1422 in Paris, France. He married **Isabeau de Bavière** on Jul 17, 1385.
51. **Isabeau de Bavière** was born in 1370. She died on Sep 24, 1435 in Paris, France.

Notes for Charles:

This was King Charles VI, King of France.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon33.html>

"The most famous mad King of France was Charles VI (1368-1422), who had the conviction that he was made of glass and about to break.

"Agreeable and pleasure-loving young man. Soon his uncles, the Dukes of Anjou, Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon, took over the government, raised taxes and plundered the treasury. The Hundred Years War against England had left France short of funds and in 1382 revolts broke out in many parts of France. In 1388 Charles, aided by his brother Louis of Orléans (1371-1407), removed his uncles from power and replaced them with a group of his father's councillors of humble origins."

Source: http://www.xs4all.nl/~kvenjb/madmonarchs/charles6/charles6_bio.htm

"He was born in Paris, the son of King Charles V and Jeanne de Bourbon. At the age of eleven, he was crowned King of France in 1380 in the cathedral at Reims. Until he took complete charge as king in 1388, France was ruled by his uncle, Philip the Bold.

"Charles VI was known both as Charles the Well Beloved and later as Charles the Mad, since, beginning in his mid-twenties, he experienced bouts of psychosis. These fits of madness would recur for the rest of his life. Doctors today believe, based on his ups and downs, that he may in fact have suffered from either schizophrenia or porphyria."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_VI_of_France

52. **"John of Gaunt" John** (son of Edward III and Philippa of Hainaut) was born on Jun 24, 1340 in Ghent, England. He died on Feb 03, 1399 in Leicester Castle, England. He married **Katherine Swynford** (daughter of Payne "Gilles" Roet) about 1395.

53. **Katherine Swynford**

Notes for "John of Gaunt" John:

John of Gaunt, the 1st Duke of Lancaster, was born March 6, 1340 at Ghent, Flanders (middle-western Europe). He was the third of five surviving sons of King Edward III of England. He died February 3, 1399 (age 58) at Leicester Castle, Leicestershire. He was buried March 15, 1399 at St. Paul's Cathedral, City of London.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_of_Gaunt

John is my 15th cousin, 18 times removed. He is the second cousin, 10 times removed of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter. She is my seventh great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Traced another way, John is my 7th great great grandfather Dannett Abney (1659-1732).

"John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster was the third surviving son of King Edward III of England and Philippa of Hainault. He gained his name "John of Gaunt," because he was born at Ghent in 1340. The fabulously wealthy Gaunt exercised tremendous influence over the throne during the minority reign of his nephew, Richard II, and during the ensuing periods of political strife, but took care not to be openly associated with opponents of the King.

"John of Gaunt's legitimate male heirs, the Lancaster's, included Kings Henry IV, Henry V, and Henry VI. John of Gaunt's illegitimate descendants, who ultimately became legitimate by his marriage to Katherine Swynford in 1396, the Beaufort's, later married into the House of Tudor, which ascended to the throne in the person of Henry VII. In addition, Gaunt's legitimate descendants included his daughters Philippa of Lancaster, Queen consort of John I of Portugal and mother of King Edward of Portugal, Elizabeth, Duchess of Exeter, the mother of John Holland, 2nd Duke of Exeter, and Katherine of Lancaster, Queen consort of Henry III of Castile, a grand-daughter of Pedro of Castile and the mother of John

Ancestors of "James V" James

II of Castile.

"When John of Gaunt died in 1399, his estates were declared forfeited to the crown, as Richard II had exiled John's less diplomatic heir, Henry Bolingbroke, in 1398. Bolingbroke returned and deposed the unpopular Richard, to reign as King Henry IV of England (1399-1413), the first of the descendants of John of Gaunt to hold the throne of England. John of Gaunt was buried in the nave of Old St. Paul's Cathedral in an alabaster tomb designed by Henry Yevele (similar to that of his son in Canterbury Cathedral)."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_of_Gaunt%2C_1st_Duke_of_Lancaster

58. **Ralph "Earl of Westmoreland" Neville** He died on Jan 15, 1458. He married **Mary de Ferrers**.
59. **Mary de Ferrers** (daughter of Robert de Ferrers and Joan Beaufort) was born before 1394. She died on Jan 25, 1458.

Generation 7

100. **Charles** (son of Jean and "Bonne of Luxembourg" Bonne) was born on Jan 31, 1338. He died on Sep 16, 1380. He married **Jeanne de Bourbon**.
101. **Jeanne de Bourbon** was born on Feb 03, 1338. She died on Feb 06, 1378 in Paris, France.

Notes for Charles:

"Charles V the Wise (French: Charles V le Sage) (January 31, 1338 ?September 16, 1380) was king of France from 1364 to 1380 and a member of the Valois Dynasty. His reign marked a high point for France during the Hundred Years War, with his armies recovering much of the territory ceded to England at the Treaty of Bretigny.

"Charles was born at Vincennes, Île-de-France, France, the son of King Jean II and Bonne of Luxembourg. Upon his father's succession to the throne in 1350, Charles became Dauphin. He was the first French heir to use the title, after the region of Dauphiné was acquired by his father.

"The future king was highly intelligent but physically weak, with pale skin and a thin, ill-proportioned body. He made a sharp contrast to his father -- who was tall, strong and sandy-haired -- and gossip at the time suggested he was not Jean's son. Similar rumors would pursue Charles' grandson, Charles VII.

"While he was in many ways a typical medieval king, Charles V has been praised by historians for his willingness to ignore the chivalric conventions of the time to achieve his aims, which led to the recovery of the territories lost at Bretigny.

"His successes, however, proved ephemeral. Charles' brothers, who dominated the regency council that ruled in the king's name until 1388, quarreled amongst themselves and divided the government. Charles VI, meanwhile, preferred tournaments to the duties of kingship, and his descent into madness in 1392 put his uncles back in power. By 1419, the country was divided between Armagnac and Burgundian factions and Henry V was conquering the northern part of France. The hard-won victories of Charles V had been lost through the venality of his successors."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_V_of_France

104. **Edward III** (son of Edward and Isabella of France) was born on Nov 13, 1312 in Windsor

Ancestors of "James V" James

Castle, Berkshire, England. He died on Jun 21, 1377 in Sheen Palace, Richmond, Surrey, England. He married **Philippa of Hainaut** (daughter of "Count of Hainault & Holland" William) on Jan 24, 1328 in York Minster, Yorkshire County, England.

105. **Philippa of Hainaut** (daughter of "Count of Hainault & Holland" William) was born on Jun 24, 1311. She died on Aug 15, 1369 in Windsor, Berkshire, England.

Notes for Edward III:

King Edward III is my 14th cousin, 19 times removed on my mother's family line. He also is the first cousin, 11 times removed to Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford on my father's family line.

In the Bible (John 6:31), people following and questioning Jesus cited the fact that their forefathers, out in the wilderness, had been given manna to eat by God. That was about 1,350 years prior to their discussion with Jesus. That length of time is similar as between us today and when King Edward III was on the throne. It is not often that we think of events that far removed from us today that we cite it in contemporary debate!

Edward III became king of England in 1327. He succeeded his father, Edward II, and belonged to the Plantagenet family of English rulers. During the 1330's, Edward invaded Scotland. He won victories there, but he could not crush the Scottish spirit of independence that had been built up by the famous Scotsman, Robert Bruce.

"Edward's forces won the Battle of Crecy in what is now the Normandy region of France. This conflict was the first major battle between France and England in the Hundred Years' War (1337-1453). Edward claimed to be the rightful king of France, and he conquered much of that country. He paid for the war by introducing an efficient system of taxing imports.

"In the last few years of his reign, Edward failed to provide vigorous leadership. The French recovered some of their land, and Edward's popularity declined. Even so, he was long remembered as an ideal king and a fine soldier. Edward was born in Windsor, near London."

Source: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, Univ. of London, World Book Encyclopedia CD1998.

He was said to have three illegitimate children by Alice Perrers.

(Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon32.html>)

"The fifty-year reign of Edward III was a dichotomy in English development. Governmental reforms affirmed the power of the emerging middle class in Parliament while placing the power of the nobility into the hands of a few. Chivalric code reached an apex in English society but only masked the greed and ambition of Edward and his barons. Social conditions were equally ambiguous: the export of raw wool (and later, the wool cloth industry) prospered and spread wealth across the nation but was offset by the devastation wrought by the Black Death. Early success in war ultimately failed to produce lasting results. Edward proved a most capable king in a time of great evolution in England.

"Edward's youth was spent in his mother's court and he was crowned at age fourteen after his father was deposed. After three years of domination by his mother and her lover, Roger Mortimer, Edward instigated a palace revolt in 1330 and assumed control of the government. Mortimer was executed and Isabella was exiled from court. Edward was married to Philippa of Hainault in 1328 and the union produced many children; the 75% survival rate of their children - nine out of twelve lived through adulthood - was incredible considering conditions of the day.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"War occupied the largest part of Edward's reign. He and Edward Baliol defeated David II of Scotland and drove David into exile in 1333. French cooperation with the Scots, French aggression in Gascony, and Edward's claim to the disputed throne of France (through his mother, Isabella) led to the first phase of the Hundred Years' war. The naval battle of Sluys (1340) gave England control of the Channel, and battles at Crecy (1346) and Calais (1347) established English supremacy on land. Hostilities ceased in the aftermath of the Black Death but war flared up again with an English invasion of France in 1355. Edward, the Black Prince and eldest son of Edward III, trounced the French cavalry at Poitiers (1356) and captured the French King John. In 1359, the Black Prince encircled Paris with his army and the defeated French negotiated for peace. The Treaty of Bretigny in 1360 ceded huge areas of northern and western France to English sovereignty. Hostilities arose again in 1369 as English armies under the king's third son, John of Gaunt, invaded France. English military strength, weakened considerably after the plague, gradually lost so much ground that by 1375, Edward agreed to the Treaty of Bruges, leaving only the coastal towns of Calais, Bordeaux, and Bayonne in English hands.

"The nature of English society transformed greatly during Edward's reign. Edward learned from the mistakes of his father and affected more cordial relations with the nobility than any previous monarch. Feudalism dissipated as mercantilism emerged: the nobility changed from a large body with relatively small holdings to a small body that held great lands and wealth. Mercenary troops replaced feudal obligations as the means of gathering armies. Taxation of exports and commerce overtook land-based taxes as the primary form of financing government (and war). Wealth was accrued by merchants as they and other middle class subjects appeared regularly for parliamentary sessions. Parliament formally divided into two houses - the upper representing the nobility and high clergy with the lower representing the middle classes - and met regularly to finance Edward's wars and pass statutes. Treason was defined by statute for the first time (1352), the office of Justice of the Peace was created to aid sheriffs (1361), and English replaced French as the national language (1362).

"Despite the king's early successes and England's general prosperity, much remained amiss in the realm. Edward and his nobles touted romantic chivalry as their credo while plundering a devastated France; chivalry emphasized the glory of war while reality stressed its costs. The influence of the Church decreased but John Wycliff spearheaded an ecclesiastical reform movement that challenged church exploitation by both the king and the pope. During 1348-1350, bubonic plague (the Black Death) ravaged the populations of Europe by as much as a fifty percent. The flowering English economy was struck hard by the ensuing rise in prices and wages. The failed military excursions of John of Gaunt into France caused excessive taxation and eroded Edward's popular support.

"The last years of Edward's reign mirrored the first, in that a woman again dominated him. Philippa died in 1369 and Edward took the unscrupulous Alice Perrers as his mistress. With Edward in his dotage and the Black Prince ill, Perrers and William Latimer (the chamberlain of the household) dominated the court with the support of John of Gaunt. Edward, the Black Prince, died in 1376 and the old king spent the last year of his life grieving. Rafael Holinshed, in *Chronicles of England*, suggested that Edward believed the death of his son was a punishment for usurping his father's crown: "But finally the thing that most grieved him, was the loss of that most noble gentleman, his dear son Prince Edward . . . But this and other mishaps that chanced to him now in his old years might seem to come to pass for a revenge of his disobedience showed to his in usurping against him. . ."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon32.html>

On April 23, 1348, King Edward III of England established the Order of the Garter (April 23). A study of the Order is posted for easy access and one can see that it still survives today as a functioning royal order from the cited Internet web site below. The Order of the Garter is the most senior and the oldest British Order of Chivalry. The Order, consisting of the King and twenty-five knights, was intended by Edward III to be reserved as the highest reward

Ancestors of "James V" James

for loyalty and for military merit. The origin of the emblem of the Order, a blue garter, is obscure. It is said to have been inspired by an incident which took place whilst the King danced with Joan, Countess of Salisbury. The Countess's garter fell to the floor and after the King retrieved it he tied it to his own leg. Those watching this were apparently amused, but the King admonished them saying, 'Honi soit qui mal y pense' (Shame on him who thinks this evil). This then became the motto of the Order.

Source: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/output/page490.asp>

Notes for Philippa of Hainaut:

Philippa is the wife of English King Edward III, who is my 14th cousin, 19 times removed. Philippa and I share a common birthday - June 24!

"Philippa of Hainaut, queen of the English King Edward III, was the daughter of William the Good, count of Holland and Hainaut, and his wife Jeanne de Valois, granddaughter of Philippe III of France. Edward visited the court of Count William in 1326 with his mother Isabella, who immediately arranged a marriage between him and Philippa. After a dispensation had been obtained for the marriage of the cousins (they were both descendants of Philippe III) Philippa was married by proxy at Valenciennes in October 1327, and landed in England in December.

"She joined Edward at York, where she was married on the 30th of January 1328. Her marriage dower had been seized by the queen dowager Isabella to pay a body of Hainauters, with whose help she had compassed her husband's deposition. The alliance ensured for Edward in his French wars the support of Philippa's influential kindred; and before starting on his French campaign he secured troops from William the Good, as well as from the count of Gelderland, the count of Julich, and the emperor Louis the Bavarian. Her mother Jeanne de Valois, visited her in 1331 and further cemented the community of interests between England and Flanders.

"Before 1335 Philippa had established a small colony of Flemish weavers at Norwich, and she showed an active interest in the weaving trade by repeated visits to the town. She also encouraged coal mining on her estates in Tynedale. Her eldest son, Edward the Black Prince, was born in 1330, and she subsequently bore six sons and five daughters. In November 1342 she became guardian of John of Gaunt and her younger children, with their lands. Her agents are said to have shown great harshness in collecting the feudal dues with which to supply her large household. The anecdotes of her piety and generosity which have been preserved are proof, however, of her popularity. She interceded in 1331 with the king for some carpenters whose careless work on a platform resulted in an accident to herself and her ladies, and on a more famous occasion her prayers saved the citizens of Calais from Edward's vengeance.

"There is a generally accepted story based on the chronicles of Jehan le Bel and Froissart, that she summoned the English forces to meet the Scottish invasion of 1346, and harangued the troops before the battle of Neville's Cross. She certainly exercised considerable influence over her husband, whom she constantly accompanied on his campaigns and her death on the 15th of August 1369 was a misfortune for the kingdom at large, since Edward from that time came under the domination of the rapacious Alice Perrers. Philippa was the patron and friend of Froissart, who was her secretary from 1361 to 1366. Queen's College, Oxford, was not, as is stated in Skelton's version of her epitaph, founded by her, but by her chaplain, Robert of Eglesfield. Her chief benefactions were made to the hospital of St. Katharine's by the Tower, London."

Source: <http://www.nndb.com/people/857/000097566/>

106. **Payne "Gilles" Roet**

116. **Ralph de Neville** was born before 1364. He died on Oct 21, 1425 in Raby, England. He

Ancestors of "James V" James

married **Joan Beaufort** (daughter of "John of Gaunt" John and "Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche) before Feb 03, 1397.

117. **Joan Beaufort** (daughter of "John of Gaunt" John and "Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche) was born about 1379 in Beaufort Castle, Anjou. She died on Nov 13, 1440.

Notes for Joan Beaufort:

Joan is my 16th cousin, 17 times removed. She also is the thirdcousin, nine times removed of Edward Southworth, the first husband ofAlice Carpenter. Alice is my seventh great grandmother through hersecond husband, Plymouth Colony Govenor William Bradford.

118. **Robert de Ferrers** He died before Nov 29, 1396. He married **Joan Beaufort** (daughter of "John of Gaunt" John and "Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche) before Sep 30, 1390.

119. **Joan Beaufort** (daughter of "John of Gaunt" John and "Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche) was born about 1379 in Beaufort Castle, Anjou. She died on Nov 13, 1440.

Notes for Joan Beaufort:

Joan is my 16th cousin, 17 times removed. She also is the thirdcousin, nine times removed of Edward Southworth, the first husband ofAlice Carpenter. Alice is my seventh great grandmother through hersecond husband, Plymouth Colony Govenor William Bradford.

Generation 8

200. **Jean** He married "**Bonne of Luxembourg**" **Bonne**.

201. "**Bonne of Luxembourg**" **Bonne**

Notes for Jean:

Jean II was King of France and father to French King Charles V. The descendancy of their line joins my line at the level of English King Charles VII, the great, great grandson of French King Charles V.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_V_of_France

208. **Edward** (son of "Longshanks" Edward I and Eleanor of Castile) was born on Apr 25, 1284 in Caernarvon, Wales. He died on Sep 21, 1327 in Near Gloucester. He married **Isabella of France**.

209. **Isabella of France**

Notes for Edward:

Edward II, my 14th cousin, 19 times removed, was one of the most unsuccessful kings in English history. He was a poor general and was disliked by nearly all his barons and even by his wife, Queen Isabella of France.

Edward, a member of the Plantagenet royal family, was born in Caernarfon, Wales. He was the first heir to the English throne to receive the title Prince of Wales. He succeeded his father, Edward I, in 1307. The young king's reign was troubled by many political trials and executions. In 1314, he lost an important battle to the Scottish leader Robert Bruce at Bannockburn, Scotland.

In 1325, Queen Isabella made a return visit to France, her country of origin. From there,

Ancestors of "James V" James

she and her lover, Roger Mortimer, organized an invasion of England. They and their supporters forced Edward to give up the throne to his son Edward III in 1327. Edward II was murdered that year.

Source: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, Univ. of London, World Book Encyclopedia CD1998.

210. **"Count of Hainault & Holland" William**

234. **"John of Gaunt" John** (son of Edward III and Philippa of Hainaut) was born on Jun 24, 1340 in Ghent, England. He died on Feb 03, 1399 in Leicester Castle, England. He married **"Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche** (daughter of Henry) on May 19, 1359.

235. **"Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche** She died on Sep 30, 1379.

Notes for "John of Gaunt" John:

John of Gaunt, the 1st Duke of Lancaster, was born March 6, 1340 at Ghent, Flanders (middle-western Europe). He was the third of five surviving sons of King Edward III of England. He died February 3, 1399 (age 58) at Leicester Castle, Leicestershire. He was buried March 15, 1399 at St. Paul's Cathedral, City of London.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_of_Gaunt

John is my 15th cousin, 18 times removed. He is the second cousin, 10 times removed of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter. She is my seventh great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Traced another way, John is my 7th great great grandfather Dannett Abney (1659-1732).

"John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster was the third surviving son of King Edward III of England and Philippa of Hainault. He gained his name "John of Gaunt," because he was born at Ghent in 1340. The fabulously wealthy Gaunt exercised tremendous influence over the throne during the minority reign of his nephew, Richard II, and during the ensuing periods of political strife, but took care not to be openly associated with opponents of the King.

"John of Gaunt's legitimate male heirs, the Lancaster's, included Kings Henry IV, Henry V, and Henry VI. John of Gaunt's illegitimate descendants, who ultimately became legitimate by his marriage to Katherine Swynford in 1396, the Beaufort's, later married into the House of Tudor, which ascended to the throne in the person of Henry VII. In addition, Gaunt's legitimate descendants included his daughters Philippa of Lancaster, Queen consort of John I of Portugal and mother of King Edward of Portugal, Elizabeth, Duchess of Exeter, the mother of John Holland, 2nd Duke of Exeter, and Katherine of Lancaster, Queen consort of Henry III of Castile, a grand-daughter of Pedro of Castile and the mother of John II of Castile.

"When John of Gaunt died in 1399, his estates were declared forfeited to the crown, as Richard II had exiled John's less diplomatic heir, Henry Bolingbroke, in 1398. Bolingbroke returned and deposed the unpopular Richard, to reign as King Henry IV of England (1399-1413), the first of the descendants of John of Gaunt to hold the throne of England. John of Gaunt was buried in the nave of Old St. Paul's Cathedral in an alabaster tomb designed by Henry Yevele (similar to that of his son in Canterbury Cathedral)."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_of_Gaunt%2C_1st_Duke_of_Lancaster

238. **"John of Gaunt" John** (son of Edward III and Philippa of Hainaut) was born on Jun 24, 1340 in Ghent, England. He died on Feb 03, 1399 in Leicester Castle, England. He married **"Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche** (daughter of Henry) on May 19, 1359.

Ancestors of "James V" James

239. **"Blanche of Lancaster" Blanche** She died on Sep 30, 1379.

Notes for "John of Gaunt" John:

John of Gaunt, the 1st Duke of Lancaster, was born March 6, 1340 at Ghent, Flanders (middle-western Europe). He was the third of five surviving sons of King Edward III of England. He died February 3, 1399 (age 58) at Leicester Castle, Leicestershire. He was buried March 15, 1399 at St. Paul's Cathedral, City of London.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_of_Gaunt

John is my 15th cousin, 18 times removed. He is the second cousin, 10 times removed of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter. She is my seventh great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Traced another way, John is my 7th great great grandfather Dannett Abney (1659-1732).

"John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster was the third surviving son of King Edward III of England and Philippa of Hainault. He gained his name "John of Gaunt," because he was born at Ghent in 1340. The fabulously wealthy Gaunt exercised tremendous influence over the throne during the minority reign of his nephew, Richard II, and during the ensuing periods of political strife, but took care not to be openly associated with opponents of the King.

"John of Gaunt's legitimate male heirs, the Lancaster's, included Kings Henry IV, Henry V, and Henry VI. John of Gaunt's illegitimate descendants, who ultimately became legitimate by his marriage to Katherine Swynford in 1396, the Beaufort's, later married into the House of Tudor, which ascended to the throne in the person of Henry VII. In addition, Gaunt's legitimate descendants included his daughters Philippa of Lancaster, Queen consort of John I of Portugal and mother of King Edward of Portugal, Elizabeth, Duchess of Exeter, the mother of John Holland, 2nd Duke of Exeter, and Katherine of Lancaster, Queen consort of Henry III of Castile, a grand-daughter of Pedro of Castile and the mother of John II of Castile.

"When John of Gaunt died in 1399, his estates were declared forfeited to the crown, as Richard II had exiled John's less diplomatic heir, Henry Bolingbroke, in 1398. Bolingbroke returned and deposed the unpopular Richard, to reign as King Henry IV of England (1399-1413), the first of the descendants of John of Gaunt to hold the throne of England. John of Gaunt was buried in the nave of Old St. Paul's Cathedral in an alabaster tomb designed by Henry Yevele (similar to that of his son in Canterbury Cathedral)."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_of_Gaunt%2C_1st_Duke_of_Lancaster

Generation 9

416. **"Longshanks" Edward I** (son of Henry III and Eleanor of Provence) was born on Jun 17, 1239 in Westminster. He died on Jul 07, 1307 in Burch-on-Sands, Cumberland, near Carlisle. He married **Eleanor of Castile** (daughter of Ferdinand) on Oct 18, 1254 in Las Huelgas, Castile.
417. **Eleanor of Castile** (daughter of Ferdinand) was born in 1244. She died on Nov 28, 1290 in Grantham, England.

Notes for "Longshanks" Edward I:

Edward I became king of England in 1272. As king, he conquered Wales and tried to gain control of Scotland. Edward belonged to the Plantagenet family of English rulers. He's my 13th cousin, 20 times removed through my Mother's family line. He also is, in my father's

Ancestors of "James V" James

family line, the 11th great grandfather of the 1st husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother.

In addition, King Edward I is the 24th great grandfather of our son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland, meaning that our daughter married well into Royalty! Steve and Tiffany are thirty-fourth cousins, four times remove

Edward I was born in Westminster (now part of London). He succeeded his father, Henry III, as king. Edward fought two wars against the Welsh, one in 1277 and another in 1282 and 1283. He conquered Wales in the second war. In 1301, Edward gave the title Prince of Wales to his son, who later became Edward II. Since then, it has become customary for English monarchs to give the title to their oldest son.

Edward was called "Longshanks" due to his great height. He was perhaps the most successful of the medieval monarchs. The first twenty years of his reign marked a high point of cooperation between crown and community. In these years, Edward made great strides in reforming government, consolidating territory, and defining foreign policy. He possessed the strength his father lacked and reasserted royal prerogative.

Edward fathered many children as well: sixteen by Eleanor of Castille before her death in 1290, and three more by Margaret. In addition, there supposedly is an illegitimate child as well.

Edward held to the concept of community, and although at times was scrupulously aggressive, ruled with the general welfare of his subjects in mind. He perceived the crown as judge of the proper course of action for the realm and its chief legislator; royal authority was granted by law and should be fully utilized for the public good, but that same law also granted protection to the king's subjects. A king should rule with the advice and consent of those whose rights were in question. The level of interaction between king and subject allowed Edward considerable leeway in achieving his goals.

Edward I added to the bureaucracy initiated by Henry II to increase his effectiveness as sovereign. He expanded the administration into four principal parts: the Chancery, the Exchequer, the Household, and the Council. The Chancery researched and created legal documents while the Exchequer received and issued money, scrutinized the accounts of local officials, and kept financial records. These two departments operated within the king's authority, but independently from his personal rule, prompting Edward to follow the practice of earlier kings in developing the Household, a mobile court of clerks and advisers that traveled with the king. The King's Council was the most vital segment of the four. It consisted of his principal ministers, trusted judges and clerks, a select group of magnates, who also followed the king. The Council dealt with matters of great importance to the realm and acted as a court for cases of national importance.

Edward's forays into the refinement of law and justice had important consequences in decreasing feudal practice. The Statute of Gloucester (1278) curbed expansion of large private holdings and established the principle that all private franchises were delegated by, and subordinate to, the crown. Royal jurisdiction became supreme: the Exchequer developed a court to hear financial disputes, the Court of Common Pleas arose to hear property disputes, and the Court of the King's Bench addressed criminal cases in which the king had a vested interest. Other statutes prohibited vassals from giving their lands to the church, encouraged primogeniture, and established the king as the sole person who could make a man his feudal vassal. In essence, Edward set the stage for land to become an article of commerce.

Edward concentrated on an aggressive foreign policy. A major campaign to control Llywelyn Gruff of Wales began in 1277 and lasted until Llywelyn's death in 1282. Wales was divided into shires, English civil law was introduced, and the region was administered by appointed justices. In the manner of earlier monarchs, Edward constructed many new castles to ensure his conquest.

Ancestors of "James V" James

In 1301, the king's eldest son was named Prince of Wales, a title still granted to all first-born male heirs to the crown. Edward found limited success in extending English influence into Ireland: he introduced a Parliament in Dublin and increased commerce in a few coastal towns, but most of the country was controlled by independent barons or Celtic tribal chieftains. He retained English holdings in France through diplomacy, but was drawn into war by the incursions of Philip IV in Gascony. He negotiated a peace with France in 1303 and retained those areas England held before the war.

In 1292, Edward chose John de Balliol as ruler of Scotland from among several men who claimed the Scottish throne. Edward demanded that Balliol pay homage to him. But this demand humiliated the Scottish people, causing them to revolt. In 1296, Balliol joined the rebel forces, but Edward forced him to surrender. Edward then took to England the Stone of Scone, the stone upon which Scottish kings had been given royal power for hundreds of years. He placed the stone in Westminster Abbey, where English monarchs were crowned.

But the Scots continued to fight England. They were led first by William Wallace and then by Robert Bruce. Bruce was crowned king of Scotland in 1306. Edward died while on his way to subdue the new king. This story was made known in the public's mind with the 1995 Mel Gibson theater movie, "Braveheart." This movie decidedly put Edward in a bad light, as it's intent was to glorify the cause of the Scots and their hero, William Wallace.

Edward's Scottish policy resulted in hostile relations between the English and the Scots for the next 250 years. It also led to an alliance between Scotland and France. As a result, England had to fight both countries at the same time. Edward's need for money to supply his army and government led him to call Parliaments more often than had any previous king. These Parliaments consisted of representatives of the nobility, the church, and common people. In return for grants of money from Parliament, Edward agreed that taxes could be levied only with Parliament's consent. He also sponsored laws on more topics than any previous king.

Magna Carta of 1215 issued by Edward's grandfather, King John, did not end the struggle between British Kings and the barons. Neither side intended to abide by the charter completely. Pope Innocent III canceled the charter after King John requested it, and war broke out immediately. After John's death in 1216, however, his son Henry III and later English kings promised to abide by the charter. The most famous of these promises was that of Edward I in 1297. Through these promises, the charter came to be recognized as part of the fundamental law of England. King Edward's edition was 37 sections or paragraphs, all of which became what is called codified law. Amazingly, ten of those paragraphs remain today in English legislation.

Edward I was not the first English king named Edward. People in England give numbers to their kings and queens with the same name only if the monarchs ruled after the Norman Conquest of 1066. There were three Anglo-Saxon kings named Edward who ruled England before 1066: Edward the Elder (870?-924), Edward the Martyr (963?-978?), and Edward the Confessor (1002?-1066).

Source Contributor: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, University of London, as published in the World Book Encyclopedia, 1996. Additional source: Encyclopedia Britannica, web site <http://www.britannica.com/history/monarchs/mon30.html>

The only copy of the Magna Carta issued by Edward that was allowed out of England belonged to H. Ross Perot, Sr., a Dallas, Texas resident and friend of this writer. Actually, it belonged to the Perot Foundation, which he created. Ross generously made a reproduction for my own records. Today, I have handed it down to my son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe.

There are 17 copies of the various issues of the Magna Carta which survive today. Four

Ancestors of "James V" James

from the rein of King John I, eight from that of Henry III, and five from Edward I. Fifteen remain securely in England, one is in Australia and one is the in America. Mr. Perot purchased the 1297 edition of King Edward in 1984 for a reported \$1.5 million. It was loaned virtually all the time of his Foundation's ownership to the United States Archives. It was displayed occasionally in Independence Hall, Philadelphia. The rest of the time mostly was on display in the National Archives Building in Washington DC, along side of the Declaration of Independence.

However, in 2008, the Perot Foundation auctioned the Magna Carta for \$21.5 million to an anonymous buyer. The Perot Foundation is the extensive source of philanthropy directed by Mr. Perot, benefiting scores of causes. This sale funded support for more good causes. Later, it was reported that the purchase was by Mr. David Rubenstein, the managing director of the Carlyle Group. The document has been kept on display at the National Archives.

468. **Edward III** (son of Edward and Isabella of France) was born on Nov 13, 1312 in Windsor Castle, Berkshire, England. He died on Jun 21, 1377 in Sheen Palace, Richmond, Surrey, England. He married **Philippa of Hainaut** (daughter of "Count of Hainault & Holland" William) on Jan 24, 1328 in York Minster, Yorkshire County, England.
469. **Philippa of Hainaut** (daughter of "Count of Hainault & Holland" William) was born on Jun 24, 1311. She died on Aug 15, 1369 in Windsor, Berkshire, England.

Notes for Edward III:

King Edward III is my 14th cousin, 19 times removed on my mother's family line. He also is the first cousin, 11 times removed to Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh grea tgrandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony GovernorWilliam Bradford on my father's family line.

In the Bible (John 6:31), people following and questioning Jesus cited the fact that their forefathers, out in the wilderness, had been given manna to eat by God. That was about 1,350 years prior to their discussion with Jesus. That length of time is similar as between us today and when King Edward III was on the throne. It is not often that we think of events that far removed from us today that we cite it in contemporary debate!

Edward III became king of England in 1327. He succeeded his father, Edward II, and belonged to the Plantagenet family of English rulers. During the 1330's, Edward invaded Scotland. He won victories there, but he could not crush the Scottish spirit of independence that had been built up by the famous Scotsman, Robert Bruce.

"Edward's forces won the Battle of Crecy in what is now the Normandy region of France. This conflict was the first major battle between France and England in the Hundred Years' War (1337-1453). Edward claimed to be the rightful king of France, and he conquered much of that country. He paid for the war by introducing an efficient system of taxing imports.

"In the last few years of his reign, Edward failed to provide vigorous leadership. The French recovered some of their land, and Edward's popularity declined. Even so, he was long remembered as an ideal king and a fine soldier. Edward was born in Windsor, near London."

Source: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, Univ. of London, World Book Encyclopedia CD1998.

He was said to have three illegitimate children by Alice Perrers.

(Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon32.html>)

Ancestors of "James V" James

"The fifty-year reign of Edward III was a dichotomy in English development. Governmental reforms affirmed the power of the emerging middle class in Parliament while placing the power of the nobility into the hands of a few. Chivalric code reached an apex in English society but only masked the greed and ambition of Edward and his barons. Social conditions were equally ambiguous: the export of raw wool (and later, the wool cloth industry) prospered and spread wealth across the nation but was offset by the devastation wrought by the Black Death. Early success in war ultimately failed to produce lasting results. Edward proved a most capable king in a time of great evolution in England.

"Edward's youth was spent in his mother's court and he was crowned at age fourteen after his father was deposed. After three years of domination by his mother and her lover, Roger Mortimer, Edward instigated a palace revolt in 1330 and assumed control of the government. Mortimer was executed and Isabella was exiled from court. Edward was married to Philippa of Hainault in 1328 and the union produced many children; the 75% survival rate of their children - nine out of twelve lived through adulthood - was incredible considering conditions of the day.

"War occupied the largest part of Edward's reign. He and Edward Baliol defeated David II of Scotland and drove David into exile in 1333. French cooperation with the Scots, French aggression in Gascony, and Edward's claim to the disputed throne of France (through his mother, Isabella) led to the first phase of the Hundred Years' war. The naval battle of Sluys (1340) gave England control of the Channel, and battles at Crecy (1346) and Calais (1347) established English supremacy on land. Hostilities ceased in the aftermath of the Black Death but war flared up again with an English invasion of France in 1355. Edward, the Black Prince and eldest son of Edward III, trounced the French cavalry at Poitiers (1356) and captured the French King John. In 1359, the Black Prince encircled Paris with his army and the defeated French negotiated for peace. The Treaty of Bretigny in 1360 ceded huge areas of northern and western France to English sovereignty. Hostilities arose again in 1369 as English armies under the king's third son, John of Gaunt, invaded France. English military strength, weakened considerably after the plague, gradually lost so much ground that by 1375, Edward agreed to the Treaty of Bruges, leaving only the coastal towns of Calais, Bordeaux, and Bayonne in English hands.

"The nature of English society transformed greatly during Edward's reign. Edward learned from the mistakes of his father and affected more cordial relations with the nobility than any previous monarch. Feudalism dissipated as mercantilism emerged: the nobility changed from a large body with relatively small holdings to a small body that held great lands and wealth. Mercenary troops replaced feudal obligations as the means of gathering armies. Taxation of exports and commerce overtook land-based taxes as the primary form of financing government (and war). Wealth was accrued by merchants as they and other middle class subjects appeared regularly for parliamentary sessions. Parliament formally divided into two houses - the upper representing the nobility and high clergy with the lower representing the middle classes - and met regularly to finance Edward's wars and pass statutes. Treason was defined by statute for the first time (1352), the office of Justice of the Peace was created to aid sheriffs (1361), and English replaced French as the national language (1362).

"Despite the king's early successes and England's general prosperity, much remained amiss in the realm. Edward and his nobles touted romantic chivalry as their credo while plundering a devastated France; chivalry emphasized the glory of war while reality stressed its costs. The influence of the Church decreased but John Wycliff spearheaded an ecclesiastical reform movement that challenged church exploitation by both the king and the pope. During 1348-1350, bubonic plague (the Black Death) ravaged the populations of Europe by as much as a fifty percent. The flowering English economy was struck hard by the ensuing rise in prices and wages. The failed military excursions of John of Gaunt into France caused excessive taxation and eroded Edward's popular support.

"The last years of Edward's reign mirrored the first, in that a woman again dominated him.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Philippa died in 1369 and Edward took the unscrupulous Alice Perrers as his mistress. With Edward in his dotage and the Black Prince ill, Perrers and William Latimer (the chamberlain of the household) dominated the court with the support of John of Gaunt. Edward, the Black Prince, died in 1376 and the old king spent the last year of his life grieving. Rafael Holinshed, in *Chronicles of England*, suggested that Edward believed the death of his son was a punishment for usurping his father's crown: "But finally the thing that most grieved him, was the loss of that most noble gentleman, his dear son Prince Edward . . . But this and other mishaps that chanced to him now in his old years might seem to come to pass for a revenge of his disobedience showed to his in usurping against him. . ."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon32.html>

On April 23, 1348, King Edward III of England established the Order of the Garter (April 23). A study of the Order is posted for easy access and one can see that it still survives today as a functioning royal order from the cited Internet web site below. The Order of the Garter is the most senior and the oldest British Order of Chivalry. The Order, consisting of the King and twenty-five knights, was intended by Edward III to be reserved as the highest reward for loyalty and for military merit. The origin of the emblem of the Order, a blue garter, is obscure. It is said to have been inspired by an incident which took place whilst the King danced with Joan, Countess of Salisbury. The Countess's garter fell to the floor and after the King retrieved it he tied it to his own leg. Those watching this were apparently amused, but the King admonished them saying, 'Honi soit qui mal y pense' (Shame on him who thinks this evil). This then became the motto of the Order.

Source: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/output/page490.asp>

Notes for Philippa of Hainaut:

Philippa is the wife of English King Edward III, who is my 14th cousin, 19 times removed. Philippa and I share a common birthday - June 24!

"Philippa of Hainaut, queen of the English King Edward III, was the daughter of William the Good, count of Holland and Hainaut, and his wife Jeanne de Valois, granddaughter of Philippe III of France. Edward visited the court of Count William in 1326 with his mother Isabella, who immediately arranged a marriage between him and Philippa. After a dispensation had been obtained for the marriage of the cousins (they were both descendants of Philippe III) Philippa was married by proxy at Valenciennes in October 1327, and landed in England in December.

"She joined Edward at York, where she was married on the 30th of January 1328. Her marriage dower had been seized by the queen dowager Isabella to pay a body of Hainauters, with whose help she had compassed her husband's deposition. The alliance ensured for Edward in his French wars the support of Philippa's influential kindred; and before starting on his French campaign he secured troops from William the Good, as well as from the count of Gelderland, the count of Julick, and the emperor Louis the Bavarian. Her mother Jeanne de Valois, visited her in 1331 and further cemented the community of interests between England and Flanders.

"Before 1335 Philippa had established a small colony of Flemish weavers at Norwich, and she showed an active interest in the weaving trade by repeated visits to the town. She also encouraged coal mining on her estates in Tynedale. Her eldest son, Edward the Black Prince, was born in 1330, and she subsequently bore six sons and five daughters. In November 1342 she became guardian of John of Gaunt and her younger children, with their lands. Her agents are said to have shown great harshness in collecting the feudal dues with which to supply her large household. The anecdotes of her piety and generosity which have been preserved are proof, however, of her popularity. She interceded in 1331 with the king for some carpenters whose careless work on a platform resulted in an accident to herself and her ladies, and on a more famous occasion her prayers saved the citizens of Calais from Edward's vengeance.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"There is a generally accepted story based on the chronicles of Jehanle Bel and Froissart, that she summoned the English forces to meet the Scottish invasion of 1346, and harangued the troops before the battle of Neville's Cross. She certainly exercised considerable influence over her husband, whom she constantly accompanied on his campaigns and her death on the 15th of August 1369 was a misfortune for the kingdom at large, since Edward from that time came under the domination of the rapacious Alice Perrers. Philippa was the patron and friend of Froissart, who was her secretary from 1361 to 1366. Queen's College, Oxford, was not, as is stated in Skelton's version of her epitaph, founded by her, but by her chaplain, Robert of Eglesfield. Her chief benefactions were made to the hospital of St. Katharine's by the Tower, London."

Source: <http://www.nndb.com/people/857/000097566/>

470. **Henry**

476. **Edward III** (son of Edward and Isabella of France) was born on Nov 13, 1312 in Windsor Castle, Berkshire, England. He died on Jun 21, 1377 in Sheen Palace, Richmond, Surrey, England. He married **Philippa of Hainaut** (daughter of "Count of Hainault & Holland" William) on Jan 24, 1328 in York Minster, Yorkshire County, England.

477. **Philippa of Hainaut** (daughter of "Count of Hainault & Holland" William) was born on Jun 24, 1311. She died on Aug 15, 1369 in Windsor, Berkshire, England.

Notes for Edward III:

King Edward III is my 14th cousin, 19 times removed on my mother's family line. He also is the first cousin, 11 times removed to Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford on my father's family line.

In the Bible (John 6:31), people following and questioning Jesus cited the fact that their forefathers, out in the wilderness, had been given manna to eat by God. That was about 1,350 years prior to their discussion with Jesus. That length of time is similar as between us today and when King Edward III was on the throne. It is not often that we think of events that far removed from us today that we cite it in contemporary debate!

Edward III became king of England in 1327. He succeeded his father, Edward II, and belonged to the Plantagenet family of English rulers. During the 1330's, Edward invaded Scotland. He won victories there, but he could not crush the Scottish spirit of independence that had been built up by the famous Scotsman, Robert Bruce.

"Edward's forces won the Battle of Crecy in what is now the Normandy region of France. This conflict was the first major battle between France and England in the Hundred Years' War (1337-1453). Edward claimed to be the rightful king of France, and he conquered much of that country. He paid for the war by introducing an efficient system of taxing imports.

"In the last few years of his reign, Edward failed to provide vigorous leadership. The French recovered some of their land, and Edward's popularity declined. Even so, he was long remembered as an ideal king and a fine soldier. Edward was born in Windsor, near London."

Source: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, Univ. of London, World Book Encyclopedia CD 1998.

He was said to have three illegitimate children by Alice Perrers.

(Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon32.html>)

Ancestors of "James V" James

"The fifty-year reign of Edward III was a dichotomy in English development. Governmental reforms affirmed the power of the emerging middle class in Parliament while placing the power of the nobility into the hands of a few. Chivalric code reached an apex in English society but only masked the greed and ambition of Edward and his barons. Social conditions were equally ambiguous: the export of raw wool (and later, the wool cloth industry) prospered and spread wealth across the nation but was offset by the devastation wrought by the Black Death. Early success in war ultimately failed to produce lasting results. Edward proved a most capable king in a time of great evolution in England.

"Edward's youth was spent in his mother's court and he was crowned at age fourteen after his father was deposed. After three years of domination by his mother and her lover, Roger Mortimer, Edward instigated a palace revolt in 1330 and assumed control of the government. Mortimer was executed and Isabella was exiled from court. Edward was married to Philippa of Hainault in 1328 and the union produced many children; the 75% survival rate of their children - nine out of twelve lived through adulthood - was incredible considering conditions of the day.

"War occupied the largest part of Edward's reign. He and Edward Baliol defeated David II of Scotland and drove David into exile in 1333. French cooperation with the Scots, French aggression in Gascony, and Edward's claim to the disputed throne of France (through his mother, Isabella) led to the first phase of the Hundred Years' war. The naval battle of Sluys (1340) gave England control of the Channel, and battles at Crecy (1346) and Calais (1347) established English supremacy on land. Hostilities ceased in the aftermath of the Black Death but war flared up again with an English invasion of France in 1355. Edward, the Black Prince and eldest son of Edward III, trounced the French cavalry at Poitiers (1356) and captured the French King John. In 1359, the Black Prince encircled Paris with his army and the defeated French negotiated for peace. The Treaty of Bretigny in 1360 ceded huge areas of northern and western France to English sovereignty. Hostilities arose again in 1369 as English armies under the king's third son, John of Gaunt, invaded France. English military strength, weakened considerably after the plague, gradually lost so much ground that by 1375, Edward agreed to the Treaty of Bruges, leaving only the coastal towns of Calais, Bordeaux, and Bayonne in English hands.

"The nature of English society transformed greatly during Edward's reign. Edward learned from the mistakes of his father and affected more cordial relations with the nobility than any previous monarch. Feudalism dissipated as mercantilism emerged: the nobility changed from a large body with relatively small holdings to a small body that held great lands and wealth. Mercenary troops replaced feudal obligations as the means of gathering armies. Taxation of exports and commerce overtook land-based taxes as the primary form of financing government (and war). Wealth was accrued by merchants as they and other middle class subjects appeared regularly for parliamentary sessions. Parliament formally divided into two houses - the upper representing the nobility and high clergy with the lower representing the middle classes - and met regularly to finance Edward's wars and pass statutes. Treason was defined by statute for the first time (1352), the office of Justice of the Peace was created to aid sheriffs (1361), and English replaced French as the national language (1362).

"Despite the king's early successes and England's general prosperity, much remained amiss in the realm. Edward and his nobles touted romantic chivalry as their credo while plundering a devastated France; chivalry emphasized the glory of war while reality stressed its costs. The influence of the Church decreased but John Wycliff spearheaded an ecclesiastical reform movement that challenged church exploitation by both the king and the pope. During 1348-1350, bubonic plague (the Black Death) ravaged the populations of Europe by as much as a fifty percent. The flowering English economy was struck hard by the ensuing rise in prices and wages. The failed military excursions of John of Gaunt into France caused excessive taxation and eroded Edward's popular support.

"The last years of Edward's reign mirrored the first, in that a woman again dominated him.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Philippa died in 1369 and Edward took the unscrupulous Alice Perrers as his mistress. With Edward in his dotage and the Black Prince ill, Perrers and William Latimer (the chamberlain of the household) dominated the court with the support of John of Gaunt. Edward, the Black Prince, died in 1376 and the old king spent the last year of his life grieving. Rafael Holinshed, in *Chronicles of England*, suggested that Edward believed the death of his son was a punishment for usurping his father's crown: "But finally the thing that most grieved him, was the loss of that most noble gentleman, his dear son Prince Edward . . . But this and other mishaps that chanced to him now in his old years might seem to come to pass for a revenge of his disobedience showed to his in usurping against him. . ."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon32.html>

On April 23, 1348, King Edward III of England established the Order of the Garter (April 23). A study of the Order is posted for easy access and one can see that it still survives today as a functioning royal order from the cited Internet web site below. The Order of the Garter is the most senior and the oldest British Order of Chivalry. The Order, consisting of the King and twenty-five knights, was intended by Edward III to be reserved as the highest reward for loyalty and for military merit. The origin of the emblem of the Order, a blue garter, is obscure. It is said to have been inspired by an incident which took place whilst the King danced with Joan, Countess of Salisbury. The Countess's garter fell to the floor and after the King retrieved it he tied it to his own leg. Those watching this were apparently amused, but the King admonished them saying, 'Honi soit qui mal y pense' (Shame on him who thinks this evil). This then became the motto of the Order.

Source: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/output/page490.asp>

Notes for Philippa of Hainaut:

Philippa is the wife of English King Edward III, who is my 14th cousin, 19 times removed. Philippa and I share a common birthday - June 24!

"Philippa of Hainaut, queen of the English King Edward III, was the daughter of William the Good, count of Holland and Hainaut, and his wife Jeanne de Valois, granddaughter of Philippe III of France. Edward visited the court of Count William in 1326 with his mother Isabella, who immediately arranged a marriage between him and Philippa. After a dispensation had been obtained for the marriage of the cousins (they were both descendants of Philippe III) Philippa was married by proxy at Valenciennes in October 1327, and landed in England in December.

"She joined Edward at York, where she was married on the 30th of January 1328. Her marriage dower had been seized by the queen dowager Isabella to pay a body of Hainauters, with whose help she had compassed her husband's deposition. The alliance ensured for Edward in his French wars the support of Philippa's influential kindred; and before starting on his French campaign he secured troops from William the Good, as well as from the count of Gelderland, the count of Julick, and the emperor Louis the Bavarian. Her mother Jeanne de Valois, visited her in 1331 and further cemented the community of interests between England and Flanders.

"Before 1335 Philippa had established a small colony of Flemish weavers at Norwich, and she showed an active interest in the weaving trade by repeated visits to the town. She also encouraged coal mining on her estates in Tynedale. Her eldest son, Edward the Black Prince, was born in 1330, and she subsequently bore six sons and five daughters. In November 1342 she became guardian of John of Gaunt and her younger children, with their lands. Her agents are said to have shown great harshness in collecting the feudal dues with which to supply her large household. The anecdotes of her piety and generosity which have been preserved are proof, however, of her popularity. She interceded in 1331 with the king for some carpenters whose careless work on a platform resulted in an accident to herself and her ladies, and on a more famous occasion her prayers saved the citizens of Calais from Edward's vengeance.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"There is a generally accepted story based on the chronicles of Jehanle Bel and Froissart, that she summoned the English forces to meet the Scottish invasion of 1346, and harangued the troops before the battle of Neville's Cross. She certainly exercised considerable influence over her husband, whom she constantly accompanied on his campaigns and her death on the 15th of August 1369 was a misfortune for the kingdom at large, since Edward from that time came under the domination of the rapacious Alice Perrers. Philippa was the patron and friend of Froissart, who was her secretary from 1361 to 1366. Queen's College, Oxford, was not, as is stated in Skelton's version of her epitaph, founded by her, but by her chaplain, Robert of Eglesfield. Her chief benefactions were made to the hospital of St. Katharine's by the Tower, London."

Source: <http://www.nndb.com/people/857/000097566/>

478. **Henry**

Generation 10

832. **Henry III** (son of "John of Lackland" John and Isabella of Angouleme) was born on Oct 01, 1207 in Winchester Castle. He died on Nov 16, 1272 in Palace of Westminster. He married **Eleanor of Provence** (daughter of Raymond Berenger) on Jan 14, 1236 in Canterbury Cathedral, Kent, England.
833. **Eleanor of Provence** (daughter of Raymond Berenger) was born in 1217. She died on Jun 24, 1291 in Amesbury (or possibly June 25).

Notes for Henry III:

English King Henry III (reigned 1216-1272), King John's son, was only nine when he became King. By 1227, when he assumed power from his regent, order had been restored, based on his acceptance of Magna Carta. However, the King's failed campaigns in France (1230 and 1242), his choice of friends and advisers, together with the cost of his scheme to make one of his younger sons King of Sicily and help the Pope against the Holy Roman Emperor, led to further disputes with the barons and united opposition in Church and State. Although Henry was extravagant and his tax demands were resented, the King's accounts show a list of many charitable donations and payments for building works (including the rebuilding of Westminster Abbey which began in 1245).

Henry is my 11th cousin, 22 times removed on my Mother's side of the family. In addition, he is the 12th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother, who became the wife of Gov. William Bradford, each for a second marriage, after each had been widowed.

The Provisions of Oxford (1258) and the Provisions of Westminster (1259) were attempts by the nobles to define common law in the spirit of Magna Carta, control appointments and set up an aristocratic council. Henry tried to defeat them by obtaining papal absolution from his oaths, and enlisting King Louis XI's help. Henry renounced the Provisions in 1262, and war broke out. The barons, under their leader, Simon de Montfort, were initially successful and even captured Henry. However, Henry escaped, joined forces with the lords of the Marches (on the Welsh border), and Henry finally defeated and killed de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham in 1265. Royal authority was restored by the Statute of Marlborough (1267), in which the King also promised to uphold Magna Carta and some of the Provisions of Westminster.

(Source: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/history/index.htm>)

Henry III, the first monarch to be crowned in his minority, inherited the throne at age nine. His reign began immersed in the rebellion created by his father, King John. London and most of the southeast were in the hands of the French Dauphin Louis and the northern

Ancestors of "James V" James

regions were under the control of rebellious barons - only the midlands and southwest were loyal to the boy king. The barons, however, rallied under Henry's first regent, William the Marshall, and expelled the French Dauphin in 1217. William the Marshall governed until his death in 1219; Hugh de Burgh, the last of the justiciars to rule with the power of a king, governed until Henry came to the throne in earnest at age twenty-five.

A variety of factors coalesced in Henry's reign to plant the first seeds of English nationalism. Throughout his minority, the barons held firm to the ideal of written restrictions on royal authority and reissued Magna Carta several times. The nobility wished to bind the king to same feudal laws under which they were held. The emerging class of free men also demanded the same protection from the king's excessive control. Barons, nobility, and free men began viewing England as a community rather than a mere aggregation of independent manors, villages, and outlying principalities. In addition to these restrictions outlined in Magna Carta, the barons asked to be consulted in matters of state and called together as a Great Council. Viewing themselves as the natural counselors of the king, they sought control over the machinery of government, particularly in the appointment of chief government positions. The Exchequer and the Chancery were separated from the rest of the government, to decrease the king's chances of ruling irresponsibly.

Nationalism, such as it was at this early stage, manifested in the form of opposition to Henry's actions. He infuriated the barons by granting favors and appointments to foreigners rather than the English nobility. Peter des Roches, the Bishop of Winchester and Henry's prime educator, introduced a number of Frenchmen from Poitou into the government; many Italians entered into English society through Henry's close ties to the papacy. His reign coincided with an expansion of papal power. Then the Church became, in effect, a massive European monarchy and the Church became as creative as it was excessive in extorting money from England. England was expected to assume a large portion of financing the myriad officials employed throughout Christendom as well as providing employment and parishes for Italians living abroad. Henry's acquiescence to the demands of Rome initiated a backlash of protest from his subjects: laymen were denied opportunity to be nominated for vacant ecclesiastical offices and clergymen lost any chance of advancement.

Matters came to a head in 1258. Henry levied extortionate taxes to pay for debts incurred through war with Wales, failed campaigns in France, and an extensive program of ecclesiastical building. Inept diplomacy and military defeat led Henry to sell his hereditary claims to all the Angevin possessions in France, except Gascony. When he assumed the considerable debts of the papacy in its fruitless war with Sicily, his barons demanded sweeping reforms and the king was in no position to offer resistance. Henry was forced to agree to the Provisions of Oxford, a document placing the barons in virtual control of the realm. A council of fifteen men, comprised of both the king's supporters and detractors, effected a situation whereby Henry could do nothing, without the council's knowledge and consent. The magnates handled every level of government with great unity initially but gradually succumbed to petty bickering; the Provisions of Oxford remained in force for only a few years. Henry reasserted his authority and denied the Provisions, resulting in the outbreak of civil war in 1264. Edward, Henry's eldest son, led the king's forces with the opposition commanded by Simon de Montfort, Henry's brother-in-law. At the Battle of Lewes, in Sussex, de Montfort defeated Edward and captured both king and son - and found himself in control of the government.

Simon de Montfort held absolute power after subduing Henry, but was a champion of reform. The nobility supported him, because of his royalties and belief in the Provisions of Oxford. De Montfort, with two close associates, selected a council of nine (whose function was similar to the earlier council of fifteen), and ruled in the king's name. De Montfort recognized the need to gain the backing of smaller landowners and prosperous townsmen: in 1264, he summoned knights from each shire in addition to the normal high churchmen and nobility to a nearly pre-Parliament, and in 1265 invited burgesses from selected towns. Although Parliament as an institution was yet to be formalized, the latter session was a precursor to both the elements of Parliament: the House of Lords and the House of Commons.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Later in 1265, de Montfort lost the support of one of the most powerful barons, the Earl of Gloucester, and Edward also managed to escape. The two gathered an army and defeated de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham. Worcester de Montfort was slain and Henry was released; Henry resumed control of the throne but, for the remainder of his reign, Edward exercised the real power of the throne in his father's stead. The old king, after a long reign of fifty-six years, died in 1272. Although a failure as a politician and soldier, his reign was significant for defining the English monarchical position until the end of the fifteenth century: kingship limited by law.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon29.html>

Notes for Eleanor of Provence:

The daughter of Raymond Berengar, count of Provence, Eleanor was married to Henry in 1236. She was a vigorous and incisive woman and had much influence on her husband, as did her unpopular relatives and other foreign courtiers who followed her to England. During the ascendancy of Simon de Montfort in 1264-65, Eleanor raised mercenaries in France for her husband's cause. She was dispatched to a convent in 1286 but was sometimes consulted by her son, Edward I.

Source: <http://www.bartleby.com/65/el/EleanorP.html>

834. **Ferdinand**

936. **Edward** (son of "Longshanks" Edward I and Eleanor of Castile) was born on Apr 25, 1284 in Caernarvon, Wales. He died on Sep 21, 1327 in Near Gloucester. He married **Isabella of France**.

937. **Isabella of France**

Notes for Edward:

Edward II, my 14th cousin, 19 times removed, was one of the most unsuccessful kings in English history. He was a poor general and was disliked by nearly all his barons and even by his wife, Queen Isabella of France.

Edward, a member of the Plantagenet royal family, was born in Caernarvon, Wales. He was the first heir to the English throne to receive the title Prince of Wales. He succeeded his father, Edward I, in 1307. The young king's reign was troubled by many political trials and executions. In 1314, he lost an important battle to the Scottish leader Robert Bruce at Bannockburn, Scotland.

In 1325, Queen Isabella made a return visit to France, her country of origin. From there, she and her lover, Roger Mortimer, organized an invasion of England. They and their supporters forced Edward to give up the throne to his son Edward III in 1327. Edward II was murdered that year.

Source: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, Univ. of London, World Book Encyclopedia CD 1998.

938. **"Count of Hainault & Holland" William**

940. **Henry**

952. **Edward** (son of "Longshanks" Edward I and Eleanor of Castile) was born on Apr 25, 1284 in Caernarvon, Wales. He died on Sep 21, 1327 in Near Gloucester. He married **Isabella of**

Ancestors of "James V" James

France.

953. **Isabella of France**

Notes for Edward:

Edward II, my 14th cousin, 19 times removed, was one of the most unsuccessful kings in English history. He was a poor general and was disliked by nearly all his barons and even by his wife, Queen Isabella of France.

Edward, a member of the Plantagenet royal family, was born in Caernarfon, Wales. He was the first heir to the English throne to receive the title Prince of Wales. He succeeded his father, Edward I, in 1307. The young king's reign was troubled by many political trials and executions. In 1314, he lost an important battle to the Scottish leader Robert Bruce at Bannockburn, Scotland.

In 1325, Queen Isabella made a return visit to France, her country of origin. From there, she and her lover, Roger Mortimer, organized an invasion of England. They and their supporters forced Edward to give up the throne to his son Edward III in 1327. Edward II was murdered that year.

Source: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, Univ. of London, World Book Encyclopedia CD1998.

954. **"Count of Hainault & Holland" William**

956. **Henry**

Generation 11

166 4. **"John of Lackland" John** (son of "Henry Plantagenet" Henry II and Eleanor of Aquitaine) was born on Dec 24, 1167 in Beaumont Palace, Oxford, England. He died on Oct 18, 1216 in Newark Castle, Nottinghamshire. He married **Isabella of Angouleme** (daughter of Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer) on Aug 24, 1200 in Bordeaux Cathedral.

166 5. **Isabella of Angouleme** (daughter of Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer) was born in 1188. She died on Jun 04, 1246.

Notes for "John of Lackland" John:

John, known as John Lackland, is remembered as one of England's worst kings. Perhaps the most historically significant event occurring out of King John's rein was his issuance of the Magna Carta. It occurred, in spite of him ... not because of him, trying to advance some good. John is my 10th cousin, 23 times removed. He is also the [13th great grandfather of Edward Southworth](#), the first husband of my seven times great grandmother, Alice Carpenter. He is my 21st step great grandfather.

It is of Christian interest to me that King John of Lackland appointed Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury on May 15, 1213. Stephen Langton (born about 1150 - died July 9, 1228) is believed to be the first person to divide the Bible into defined chapters. While Cardinal Hugo de Sancto Caro is also known to come up with a systematic

division of the Bible (between 1244 and 1248), it is Langton's arrangement of books and chapters that remains in use today. So, though our family did not actually give chapter divisions for today's Bible, it was one of our family who appointed the man who did so, and it is a pleasure to claim that connection to an act of spiritual significance.

Ancestors of "James V" James

John was born on Christmas Eve 1167. His parents drifted apart after his birth; his youth was divided between his eldest brother Henry's house, where he learned the art of knighthood, and the house of his father's justiciar, Ranulf Glanvil, where he learned the business of government. As the fourth child, inherited lands were not available to him, giving rise to his nickname, Lackland. His first marriage lasted but ten years and was fruitless, but his second wife, Isabella of Angouleme, bore him two sons and three daughters. He also had an illegitimate daughter, Joan, who married Llywelyn the Great, Ruler of All Wales, from which the Tudor line of monarchs was descended. The survival of the English government during John's reign is a testament to the reforms of his father, as John taxed the system socially, economically, and judicially.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon28.html>

John was unpredictable and often cruel, but he showed administrative ability. He improved methods of tax collection and financial record keeping, and strengthened the courts of law, which his father had greatly enhanced. He was the youngest son of King Henry II. In 1177, Henry made John Lord of Ireland. In 1199, John succeeded his brother Richard the Lion-Hearted as king of England, and, in France, as Duke of Normandy, Duke of Aquitaine, and Count of Anjou. John's nephew Arthur claimed the right to succeed Richard. John quarreled over his French territories with Arthur and King Philip II of France. Philip declared a war against England that began in 1202. The war was fought off and on throughout the rest of John's reign. John's mismanagement--and rumors he murdered Arthur--angered French barons who had been loyal to John and led to the loss of most English holdings in France.

John disagreed with Pope Innocent III over who should become archbishop of Canterbury. In 1208, the pope placed England under an interdict, which banned church services throughout the country. John was excommunicated the next year. His dictatorial behavior stirred discontent among the English barons. John feared his barons would revolt. To avoid this, he settled his argument with the pope in 1213. The pope then supported John, in return for liberties granted the church. But many English barons and some clergy revolted anyway when the king's plans to reconquer the lost territories in France failed. On June, 15, 1215, John grudgingly approved the settlement that became known as Magna Carta. It placed the king under English law and checked his power.

The [Magna Carta](#) (pronounced MAG nuh KAHR tuh) is a document that marked a decisive step forward in the development of constitutional government and legal ideas in England. In later centuries, much of the rest of the world also benefited from it because many countries followed English models in creating their own governments. The countries include the United States and Canada. The Latin words Magna Carta mean Great Charter.

English barons forced King John to approve the charter in June 1215 at [Runnymede](#), southwest of London. In the charter, the king granted many rights to the English aristocracy. The ordinary English people gained little. But many years later, Magna Carta became a model for those who demanded democratic government and individual rights for all. In its own time, the greatest value of Magna Carta was that it limited royal power and made it clear that even the king had to obey the law. Of course, this dramatic change in English governance benefited only the landed aristocracy (the Barons) and not really the common man. The common man would have to wait till later develops in governing history to see more of the freedoms that we expect to experience in everyday life today.

Reasons for the charter. From the Norman invasion of England in 1066 through the 1100's, most of the kings who ruled England were able and strong. They usually tried to govern justly and respected feudal law. Under feudal law, nobles called barons received land in return for military and other services to the king. Law and custom established the barons' duties and what was expected of the king. But there was no actual control over the king's power. When John became king in 1199, he exercised his power even more forcefully than earlier kings. He demanded more military service than they did. He sold royal positions to the highest bidders. He demanded larger amounts of money without consulting the barons,

Ancestors of "James V" James

which was contrary to feudal custom. He decided cases according to his wishes, and people who lost cases in his court had to pay crushing penalties.

English barons and church leaders began to express dissatisfaction with John's rule early in his reign. Their unhappiness grew when he lost most of the English possessions in France in warfare lasting from 1202 to 1206. In 1213, a group met at St. Albans, near London, and drew up a list of demands based in part on the coronation charter of Henry I, who had been king from 1100 to 1135. After John lost an important battle against France at Bouvines (in what is now western Belgium) in 1214, civil war broke out in England. John saw that he could not defeat his opponents' army, and so he agreed to a set of articles on June 15, 1215. Four days later, the articles were engrossed (written out in legal form) as a royal charter. Copies of the charter were distributed throughout the kingdom.

Promises in the charter. Magna Carta contained 63 articles, most of which pledged the king to uphold feudal customs. These articles chiefly benefited the barons and other landholders. One article granted the church freedom from royal interference. A few articles guaranteed rights to residents of towns. Ordinary free people and peasants were hardly mentioned in the charter, even though they made up by far the largest part of England's population.

Some articles that in 1215 applied only to feudal landholders later became important to all the people. For example, the charter stated that the king could make no special demands for money without the consent of the barons. Later, this provision was used to support the argument that no tax should be raised without the consent of Parliament.

Still other articles became foundations for modern justice. One article says that the king will not sell, deny, or delay justice. Another says that no freeman shall be imprisoned, deprived of property, exiled, or destroyed, except by the lawful judgment of his peers (equals) or by the law of the land. The idea of due process of law, including trial by jury, developed from these articles. In John's time, however, there was no such thing as trial by jury in criminal cases.

The charter tried to make the king keep his promises by establishing a council of barons. If the king violated the charter and ignored warnings of the council, it could raise an army to force the king to live by the charter's provisions. But these measures were unsuccessful.

The charter issuance in 1215 of the Magna Carta did not end the struggle between King John and the barons. Neither side intended to abide by the charter completely. [Pope Innocent III](#) canceled the charter at the king's request, and war broke out immediately. After King John's death in 1216, however, his son Henry III and later English kings promised to abide by the charter, issuing several copies over the years. The most famous of these promises was that of Edward I in 1297. Through these promises, the charter came to be recognized as part of the fundamental law of England. This was chiefly the version issued by King John's grandson, Edward I

Much later, in the 1600's, members of parliament used Magna Carta to rally support in their struggle against the strong rule of the Stuart kings. These lawmakers came to view the charter as a constitutional check on royal power. They cited it as a legal support for the argument that there could be no laws or taxation without the consent of Parliament. These members of Parliament used the charter to demand guarantees of trial by jury, safeguards against unfair imprisonment, and other rights.

In the 1700's, [Sir William Blackstone](#), a famous lawyer, set down these ideals as legal rights of the people in his famous Commentaries on the Laws of England. Also in the 1700's, colonists carried these English ideals on legal and political rights to America. The ideals

Ancestors of "James V" James

eventually became part of the framework of the Constitution of the United States.

Four originals of King John's 1215 charter remain. Two are in the British Library in London, one in Salisbury Cathedral, and one in Lincoln Cathedral. For many years, the document was commonly known as the Charter. But in 1946, the British government officially adopted the Latin spelling, Magna Carta.

Sources: World Book Encyclopedia Contributor: Emily Zack Tabuteau, Ph.D. Associate Professor. of History, Michigan State University.

Magna Carta and the Idea of Liberty. Ed. by James C. Holt. Krieger, 1982. First published in 1972.

Swindler, William F. Magna Carta: Legend and Legacy. Bobbs, 1965.

Contributor: Emily Zack Tabuteau, Ph.D., Associate Professor. of History, Michigan State University.

As history turned out, King John's son and grandson, both English Kings, issued other versions of the Magna Carta with essentially the same effect. In total, the three generations of Kings issued 17 Magna Carta's, all of which are still preserved. Fifteen are in various British institutions, one is in Australia and one is in America, previously owned by the Perot Foundation of Mr. H. Ross Perot, Sr., an acquaintance of mine and a member of the church where I was an administrator for 22 years prior to retirement. The Perot Foundation sold its copy for \$23.5 million, having originally purchased it a decade earlier for \$1.5 million.

The Angevin family feuds profoundly marked John. He and Richard clashed in 1184 following Richard's refusal to honor his father's wishes surrender Aquitaine to John. The following year Henry II sent John to rule Ireland, but John alienated both the native Irish and the transplanted Anglo-Normans who emigrated to carve out new lordships for themselves; the experiment was a total failure and John returned home within six months. After Richard gained the throne in 1189, he gave John vast estates in an unsuccessful attempt to appease his younger brother. John failed to overthrow Richard's administrators during the German captivity and conspired with Philip II in another failed coup attempt. Upon Richard's release from captivity in 1194, John was forced to sue for pardon and he spent the next five years in his brother's shadow.

John's reign was troubled in many respects. A quarrel with the Church resulted in England being placed under an interdict in 1207, with John excommunicated two years later. The dispute centered on John's stubborn refusal to install the papal candidate, Stephen Langdon, as Archbishop of Canterbury; the issue was not resolved until John surrendered to the wishes of Pope Innocent III and paid tribute for England as the Pope's vassal.

John proved extremely unpopular with his subjects. In addition to the Irish debacle, he inflamed his French vassals by orchestrating the murder of his popular nephew, Arthur of Brittany. By spring 1205, he lost the last of his French possessions and returned to England. The final ten years of his reign were occupied with failed attempts to regain these territories. After levying a number of new taxes upon the barons to pay for his dismal campaigns, the discontented barons revolted, capturing London in May 1215. At Runnymede in the following June, John succumbed to pressure from the barons, the Church, and the English people at-large, and signed the Magna Carta. The document, a declaration of feudal rights, stressed three points. First, the Church was free to make ecclesiastic appointments. Second, larger-than-normal amounts of money could only be collected with the consent of the king's feudal tenants. Third, no freeman was to be punished except within the context of common law. Magna Carta, although a testament to John's complete failure as monarch, was the forerunner of modern constitutions. John only signed the document as a means of buying time and his hesitance to implement its principles compelled the nobility to seek French assistance. The barons offered the throne to Philip II's son, Louis. John died in the midst of invasion from the French in the South and

Ancestors of "James V" James

rebellion from his barons in the North.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon28.html>

As reader will see later in this paper, John's son and grandson both issued various versions of the Magna Carta several times during therein of each to reaffirm its initiatives. We know of a total of 17 of them that survive today, 15 of which remain in English hands, one in Australia and one was owned by the Perot Foundation of Dallas, Texas, but has been sold. Mr. Ross Perot, the originator of the Perot Foundation, gave me a personal copy of this Magna Carta, and it is framed for my enjoyment and display. It has now been passed only to my eldest son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe. Mr. Perot and his family were members of Highland Park Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas.

166 **Raymond Berenger**
6.

187 **"Longshanks" Edward I** (son of Henry III and Eleanor of Provence) was born on Jun 17,
2. 1239 in Westminster. He died on Jul 07, 1307 in Burch-on-Sands, Cumberland, near Carlisle. He married **Eleanor of Castile** (daughter of Ferdinand) on Oct 18, 1254 in Las Huelgas, Castile.

187 **Eleanor of Castile** (daughter of Ferdinand) was born in 1244. She died on Nov 28, 1290 in
3. Grantham, England.

Notes for "Longshanks" Edward I:

Edward I became king of England in 1272. As king, he conquered Wales and tried to gain control of Scotland. Edward belonged to the Plantagenet family of English rulers. He's my 13th cousin, 20 times removed through my Mother's family line. He also is, in my father's family line, the 11th great grandfather of the 1st husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother.

In addition, King Edward I is the 24th great grandfather of our son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland, meaning that our daughter married well into Royalty! Steve and Tiffany are thirty-fourth cousins, four times remove

Edward I was born in Westminster (now part of London). He succeeded his father, Henry III, as king. Edward fought two wars against the Welsh, one in 1277 and another in 1282 and 1283. He conquered Wales in the second war. In 1301, Edward gave the title Prince of Wales to his son, who later became Edward II. Since then, it has become customary for English monarchs to give the title to their oldest son.

Edward was called "Longshanks" due to his great height. He was perhaps the most successful of the medieval monarchs. The first twenty years of his reign marked a high point of cooperation between crown and community. In these years, Edward made great strides in reforming government, consolidating territory, and defining foreign policy. He possessed the strength his father lacked and reasserted royal prerogative.

Edward fathered many children as well: sixteen by Eleanor of Castile before her death in 1290, and three more by Margaret. In addition, there supposedly is an illegitimate child as well.

Edward held to the concept of community, and although at time was scrupulously

Ancestors of "James V" James

aggressive, ruled with the general welfare of his subjects in mind. He perceived the crown as judge of the proper course of action for the realm and its chief legislator; royal authority was granted by law and should be fully utilized for the public good, but that same law also granted protection to the king's subjects. A king should rule with the advice and consent of those whose rights were in question. The level of interaction between king and subject allowed Edward considerable leeway in achieving his goals.

Edward I added to the bureaucracy initiated by Henry II to increase his effectiveness as sovereign. He expanded the administration into four principal parts: the Chancery, the Exchequer, the Household, and the Council. The Chancery researched and created legal documents while the Exchequer received and issued money, scrutinized the accounts of local officials, and kept financial records. These two departments operated within the king's authority, but independently from his personal rule, prompting Edward to follow the practice of earlier kings in developing the Household, a mobile court of clerks and advisers that traveled with the king. The King's Council was the most vital segment of the four. It consisted of his principal ministers, trusted judges and clerks, a select group of magnates, who also followed the king. The Council dealt with matters of great importance to the realm and acted as a court for cases of national importance.

Edward's forays into the refinement of law and justice had important consequences in decreasing feudal practice. The Statute of Gloucester(1278) curbed expansion of large private holdings and established the principle that all private franchises were delegated by, and subordinate to, the crown. Royal jurisdiction became supreme: the Exchequer developed a court to hear financial disputes, the Court of Common Pleas arose to hear property disputes, and the Court of the King's Bench addressed criminal cases in which the king had a vested interest. Other statutes prohibited vassals from giving their lands to the church, encouraged primogeniture, and established the king as the sole person who could make a man his feudal vassal. In essence, Edward set the stage for land to become an article of commerce.

Edward concentrated on an aggressive foreign policy. A major campaign to control Llywelyn Gruff of Wales began in 1277 and lasted until Llywelyn's death in 1282. Wales was divided into shires, English civil law was introduced, and the region was administered by appointed justices. In the manner of earlier monarchs, Edward constructed many new castles to ensure his conquest.

In 1301, the king's eldest son was named Prince of Wales, a title still granted to all first-born male heirs to the crown. Edward found limited success in extending English influence into Ireland: he introduced a Parliament in Dublin and increased commerce in a few coastal towns, but most of the country was controlled by independent barons or Celtic tribal chieftains. He retained English holdings in France through diplomacy, but was drawn into war by the incursions of Philip IV in Gascony. He negotiated a peace with France in 1303 and retained those areas England held before the war.

In 1292, Edward chose John de Balliol as ruler of Scotland from among several men who claimed the Scottish throne. Edward demanded that Balliol pay homage to him. But this demand humiliated the Scottish people, causing them to revolt. In 1296, Balliol joined the rebel forces, but Edward forced him to surrender. Edward then took to England the Stone of Scone, the stone upon which Scottish kings had been given royal power for hundreds of years. He placed the stone in Westminster Abbey, where English monarchs were crowned.

But the Scots continued to fight England. They were led first by William Wallace and then by Robert Bruce. Bruce was crowned king of Scotland in 1306. Edward died while on his way to subdue the new king. This story was made known in the public's mind with the 1995 Mel Gibson theater movie, "Braveheart." This movie decidedly put Edward in a bad light, as it's intent was to glorify the cause of the Scots and their hero, William Wallace.

Edward's Scottish policy resulted in hostile relations between the English and the Scots for the next 250 years. It also led to an alliance between Scotland and France. As a result,

Ancestors of "James V" James

England had to fight both countries at the same time. Edward's need for money to supply his army and government led him to call Parliaments more often than had any previous king. These Parliaments consisted of representatives of the nobility, the church, and common people. In return for grants of money from Parliament, Edward agreed that taxes could be levied only with Parliament's consent. He also sponsored laws on more topics than any previous king.

Magna Carta of 1215 issued by Edward's grandfather, King John, did not end the struggle between British Kings and the barons. Neither side intended to abide by the charter completely. Pope Innocent III canceled the charter after King John requested it, and war broke out immediately. After John's death in 1216, however, his son Henry III and later English kings promised to abide by the charter. The most famous of these promises was that of Edward I in 1297. Through these promises, the charter came to be recognized as part of the fundamental law of England. King Edward's edition was 37 sections or paragraphs, all of which became what is called codified law. Amazingly, ten of those paragraphs remain today in English legislation.

Edward I was not the first English king named Edward. People in England give numbers to their kings and queens with the same name only if the monarchs ruled after the Norman Conquest of 1066. There were three Anglo-Saxon kings named Edward who ruled England before 1066: Edward the Elder (870?-924), Edward the Martyr (963?-978?), and Edward the Confessor (1002?-1066).

Source Contributor: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, University of London, as published in the World Book Encyclopedia, 1996. Additional source:Encyclopedia Britannica, web site<http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon30.html>

The only copy of the Magna Carta issued by Edward that was allowed out of England belonged to H. Ross Perot, Sr., a Dallas, Texas resident and friend of this writer. Actually, it belonged to the Perot Foundation, which he created. Ross generously made a reproduction for my own records. Today, I have handed it down to my son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe.

There are 17 copies of the various issues of the Magna Carta which survive today. Four from the rein of King John I, eight from that of Henry III, and five from Edward I. Fifteen remain securely in England, one is in Australia and one is the in America. Mr. Perot purchased the 1297 edition of King Edward in 1984 for a reported \$1.5 million. It was loaned virtually all the time of his Foundation's ownership to the United States Archives. It was displayed occasionally in Independence Hall, Philadelphia. The rest of the time mostly was on display in the National Archives Building in Washington DC, along side of the Declaration of Independence.

However, in 2008, the Perot Foundation auctioned the Magna Carta for \$21.5 million to an anonymous buyer. The Perot Foundation is the extensive source of philanthropy directed by Mr. Perot, benefiting scores of causes. This sale funded support for more good causes. Later, it was reported that the purchase was by Mr. David Rubenstein, the managing director of the Carlyle Group. The document has been kept on display at the National Archives.

190 "Longshanks" **Edward I** (son of Henry III and Eleanor of Provence) was born on Jun 17,
4. 1239 in Westminster. He died on Jul 07, 1307 in Burch-on-Sands, Cumberland, near Carlisle. He married **Eleanor of Castile** (daughter of Ferdinand) on Oct 18, 1254 in Las Huelgas, Castile.

190 **Eleanor of Castile** (daughter of Ferdinand) was born in 1244. She died on Nov 28, 1290 in
5. Grantham, England.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Notes for "Longshanks" Edward I:

Edward I became king of England in 1272. As king, he conquered Wales and tried to gain control of Scotland. Edward belonged to the Plantagenet family of English rulers. He's my 13th cousin, 20 times removed through my Mother's family line. He also is, in my father's family line, the 11th great grandfather of the 1st husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother.

In addition, King Edward I is the 24th great grandfather of our son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland, meaning that our daughter married well into Royalty! Steve and Tiffany are thirty-fourth cousins, four times removed.

Edward I was born in Westminster (now part of London). He succeeded his father, Henry III, as king. Edward fought two wars against the Welsh, one in 1277 and another in 1282 and 1283. He conquered Wales in the second war. In 1301, Edward gave the title Prince of Wales to his son, who later became Edward II. Since then, it has become customary for English monarchs to give the title to their oldest son.

Edward was called "Longshanks" due to his great height. He was perhaps the most successful of the medieval monarchs. The first twenty years of his reign marked a high point of cooperation between crown and community. In these years, Edward made great strides in reforming government, consolidating territory, and defining foreign policy. He possessed the strength his father lacked and reasserted royal prerogative.

Edward fathered many children as well: sixteen by Eleanor of Castille before her death in 1290, and three more by Margaret. In addition, there supposedly is an illegitimate child as well.

Edward held to the concept of community, and although at times was scrupulously aggressive, ruled with the general welfare of his subjects in mind. He perceived the crown as judge of the proper course of action for the realm and its chief legislator; royal authority was granted by law and should be fully utilized for the public good, but that same law also granted protection to the king's subjects. A king should rule with the advice and consent of those whose rights were in question. The level of interaction between king and subject allowed Edward considerable leeway in achieving his goals.

Edward I added to the bureaucracy initiated by Henry II to increase his effectiveness as sovereign. He expanded the administration into four principal parts: the Chancery, the Exchequer, the Household, and the Council. The Chancery researched and created legal documents while the Exchequer received and issued money, scrutinized the accounts of local officials, and kept financial records. These two departments operated within the king's authority, but independently from his personal rule, prompting Edward to follow the practice of earlier kings in developing the Household, a mobile court of clerks and advisers that traveled with the king. The King's Council was the most vital segment of the four. It consisted of his principal ministers, trusted judges and clerks, a select group of magnates, who also followed the king. The Council dealt with matters of great importance to the realm and acted as a court for cases of national importance.

Edward's forays into the refinement of law and justice had important consequences in decreasing feudal practice. The Statute of Gloucester (1278) curbed expansion of large private holdings and established the principle that all private franchises were delegated by, and subordinate to, the crown. Royal jurisdiction became supreme: the Exchequer developed a court to hear financial disputes, the Court of Common Pleas arose to hear property disputes, and the Court of the King's Bench addressed criminal cases in which the king had a vested interest. Other statutes prohibited vassals from giving their lands to the church, encouraged primogeniture, and established the king as the sole person who could make a man his feudal vassal. In essence, Edward set the stage for land to become an article of commerce.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Edward concentrated on an aggressive foreign policy. A major campaign to control Llywelyn Gruff of Wales began in 1277 and lasted until Llywelyn's death in 1282. Wales was divided into shires, English civil law was introduced, and the region was administered by appointed justices. In the manner of earlier monarchs, Edward constructed many new castles to ensure his conquest.

In 1301, the king's eldest son was named Prince of Wales, a title still granted to all first-born male heirs to the crown. Edward found limited success in extending English influence into Ireland: he introduced a Parliament in Dublin and increased commerce in a few coastal towns, but most of the country was controlled by independent barons or Celtic tribal chieftains. He retained English holdings in France through diplomacy, but was drawn into war by the incursions of Philip IV in Gascony. He negotiated a peace with France in 1303 and retained those areas England held before the war.

In 1292, Edward chose John de Balliol as ruler of Scotland from among several men who claimed the Scottish throne. Edward demanded that Balliol pay homage to him. But this demand humiliated the Scottish people, causing them to revolt. In 1296, Balliol joined the rebel forces, but Edward forced him to surrender. Edward then took to England the Stone of Scone, the stone upon which Scottish kings had been given royal power for hundreds of years. He placed the stone in Westminster Abbey, where English monarchs were crowned.

But the Scots continued to fight England. They were led first by William Wallace and then by Robert Bruce. Bruce was crowned king of Scotland in 1306. Edward died while on his way to subdue the new king. This story was made known in the public's mind with the 1995 Mel Gibson theater movie, "Braveheart." This movie decidedly put Edward in a bad light, as it's intent was to glorify the cause of the Scots and their hero, William Wallace.

Edward's Scottish policy resulted in hostile relations between the English and the Scots for the next 250 years. It also led to an alliance between Scotland and France. As a result, England had to fight both countries at the same time. Edward's need for money to supply his army and government led him to call Parliaments more often than had any previous king. These Parliaments consisted of representatives of the nobility, the church, and common people. In return for grants of money from Parliament, Edward agreed that taxes could be levied only with Parliament's consent. He also sponsored laws on more topics than any previous king.

Magna Carta of 1215 issued by Edward's grandfather, King John, did not end the struggle between British Kings and the barons. Neither side intended to abide by the charter completely. Pope Innocent III canceled the charter after King John requested it, and war broke out immediately. After John's death in 1216, however, his son Henry III and later English kings promised to abide by the charter. The most famous of these promises was that of Edward I in 1297. Through these promises, the charter came to be recognized as part of the fundamental law of England. King Edward's edition was 37 sections or paragraphs, all of which became what is called codified law. Amazingly, ten of those paragraphs remain today in English legislation.

Edward I was not the first English king named Edward. People in England give numbers to their kings and queens with the same name only if the monarchs ruled after the Norman Conquest of 1066. There were three Anglo-Saxon kings named Edward who ruled England before 1066: Edward the Elder (870?-924), Edward the Martyr (963?-978?), and Edward the Confessor (1002?-1066).

Source Contributor: John Gillingham, Senior Lecturer, London School of Economics and Political Science, University of London, as published in the World Book Encyclopedia, 1996. Additional source: Encyclopedia Britannica, web site <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon30.html>

The only copy of the Magna Carta issued by Edward that was allowed out of England

Ancestors of "James V" James

belonged to H. Ross Perot, Sr., a Dallas, Texas resident and friend of this writer. Actually, it belonged to the Perot Foundation, which he created. Ross generously made a reproduction for my own records. Today, I have handed it down to my son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe.

There are 17 copies of the various issues of the Magna Carta which survive today. Four from the rein of King John I, eight from that of Henry III, and five from Edward I. Fifteen remain securely in England, one is in Australia and one is the in America. Mr. Perot purchased the 1297 edition of King Edward in 1984 for a reported \$1.5 million. It was loaned virtually all the time of his Foundation's ownership to the United States Archives. It was displayed occasionally in Independence Hall, Philadelphia. The rest of the time mostly was on display in the National Archives Building in Washington DC, along side of the Declaration of Independence.

However, in 2008, the Perot Foundation auctioned the Magna Carta for \$21.5 million to an anonymous buyer. The Perot Foundation is the extensive source of philanthropy directed by Mr. Perot, benefiting scores of causes. This sale funded support for more good causes. Later, it was reported that the purchase was by Mr. David Rubenstein, the managing director of the Carlyle Group. The document has been kept on display at the National Archives.

Generation 12

332 **"Henry Plantagenet" Henry II** (son of "Plantagenet" Geoffrey and Edith Matilda) was born 8. on Mar 05, 1133 in La Mans, France. He died on Jul 06, 1189 in Chinon Castol, Anjou. He married **Eleanor of Aquitaine** (daughter of "Duke of Aquitane" William) on May 18, 1152 in Bordeaux Cathedral, Gascony.

332 **Eleanor of Aquitaine** (daughter of "Duke of Aquitane" William) was born in 1123. She died 9. in 1204.

Notes for "Henry Plantagenet" Henry II:

King Henry II, though born in France, became King of England. He came from the Plantagenet, which was the family name of a line of kings that ruled England from 1154 to 1399. These kings descended from the marriage of Matilda, daughter of King Henry I, to Geoffrey, count of Anjou, France. Geoffrey was nicknamed "Plantagenet," because he wore a sprig of the broom (genet) plant in his cap.

Numerous historians also call these kings "Angevins," meaning from Anjou. The Plantagenet dynasty began with Henry II, son of Matilda and Geoffrey. Henry is my 9th cousin, 24 times removed, as well as the 14th great grandfather of Englishman Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. My descending from her is through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford, a Mayflower passenger which came to America in 1620.

Henry II is a pivotal point in tying together two ancient ancestries related to our families. He is the 10th great grandson of Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson, Earle of the Uplands of Norway (an eighth century Viking) and Henry is the 35th great grandson of Godwulf. Godwulf is the 65th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, though he is not directly related to me, but through their father, Steve O. Westmoreland. Godwulf is the earliest ancestor to whom any of our modern-day relatives can claim relationship.

Godwulf's descendants travel down through the family line of my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. Godwulf's birth occurred just months following the event of Mount Vesuvius erupting on August 24, 79 AD, burying the Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mount_Vesuvius

Henry II was the first King of England to come from the Plantagenet family. He reigned from 1154 until his death in 1189. He became known as the founder of the English system of common law, including introducing the use of juries and other legal procedures we consider common today.

Henry II, first of the Angevin kings, was one of the most effective of all England's monarchs. He came to the throne amid the anarchy of Stephen's reign and promptly collared his errant barons. He refined Norman government and created a capable, self-standing bureaucracy. His energy was equaled only by his ambition and intelligence. Henry survived wars, rebellion, and controversy to successfully rule one of the Middle Ages' most powerful kingdoms.

Now for a little discourse on law:

"Common law is a body of rulings made by judges on the basis of community customs and previous court decisions. It forms an essential part of the legal system of many English-speaking countries, including the United States and Canada. Common law covers such matters as contracts, ownership of property, and the payment of claims for personal injury.

"Early in England's history, judges decided cases according to the way they interpreted the beliefs and unwritten laws of the community. If another judge had ruled in an earlier, similar case, that judge's decision was often used as a precedent (guide). After many judges decided the same question in a similar way, the ruling became law.

"Common law is often contrasted with civil law, a body of rules passed by a legislature. Under civil law, a judge decides a case by following written rules, rather than previous court decisions. Common law also differs from equity, a set of standards developed to allow greater flexibility in court decisions. During the late Middle Ages, England created courts of equity to decide cases that courts of common law might treat too strictly. These courts decided cases by broad principles of justice and fairness, rather than by the rigid standards of common law. The monarch's chancellor presided over a court of equity called the court of chancery.

"The legal system of the United States has developed from English common law and equity. Only one U.S. state, Louisiana, modeled its legal system on civil law. Louisiana used the civil law of France, called the Code Napoleon. During the late 1800's, many state sccombined their courts of common law and courts of equity. One group of judges administers the combined courts. In Canada, similarly, only the province of Quebec based its legal system on French law. "

Contributor: David M. O'Brien, Ph.D., Professor. of Government, University. of Virginia, World Book Encyclopedia, 1998.

The marriage of Henry II to Eleanor of Aquitaine made him Duke of Aquitaine at the time. He became King when King Stephen died. He not only ruled over most of France, but claimed Ireland, Scotland, and Wales. It was later that his two sons rebelled against him, and each in his own time became King of England.

Henry II came into conflict with Thomas Becket, archbishop of Canterbury, over Henry's attempts to curb the independence of the church. In 1170, four of Henry's knights, believing they were acting on the King's orders, murdered Becket in his cathedral.

From Sir Winston Churchill Kt, 1675: "Henry II Plantagenet, the very first of that name and race, and the very greatest King that England ever knew, but withal the most unfortunate . . . his death being imputed to those only to whom himself had given life, his ungracioussons. . ."

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source:<http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon26.html>

Though close in time, Henry I, son of William the Conqueror, is not the father of Henry II. Rather Henry I is the grandfather of Henry II.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the Windsor Castle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. However, King Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

Notes for Eleanor of Aquitaine:

Eleanor of Aquitaine, pronounced AK wih tayn (1122-1204), was the wife of King Louis VII of France and later of King Henry II of England. She was also the mother of two English kings, Richard the Lion-Hearted and John. Her control of Aquitaine, then a vast independent state next to France, made her a central figure in the struggle for power between France and England.

Eleanor was the daughter of William X, Duke of Aquitaine. In 1137, when Eleanor was 15 years old, she inherited Aquitaine. Her land came under French control when she married Louis VII later that year. Eleanor and Louis had two daughters. But the lack of a male heir contributed to unhappiness in their marriage, and they agreed to a divorce in 1152.

Within months, Eleanor married Henry Plantagenet, who became King Henry II of England in 1154. Later, Eleanor and Henry lost affection for each other, and she supported a revolt against him in 1173. The revolt failed and Henry imprisoned Eleanor. Eleanor was freed in 1189, after Henry died and Richard became king. Eleanor greatly influenced both Richard and John during their reigns.

Contributor: Marion Meade, M.S., Author, Eleanor of Aquitaine. 1986 CD Version of the World Book Encyclopedia

333 **Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer**
0.

374 **Henry III** (son of "John of Lackland" John and Isabella of Angouleme) was born on Oct 01,
4. 1207 in Winchester Castle. He died on Nov 16, 1272 in Palace of Westminster. He married **Eleanor of Provence** (daughter of Raymond Berenger) on Jan 14, 1236 in Canterbury Cathedral, Kent, England.

374 **Eleanor of Provence** (daughter of Raymond Berenger) was born in 1217. She died on Jun
5. 24, 1291 in Amesbury (or possibly June 25).

Notes for Henry III:

English King Henry III (reigned 1216-1272), King John's son, was only nine when he became King. By 1227, when he assumed power from his regent, order had been restored, based on his acceptance of Magna Carta. However, the King's failed campaigns in France (1230 and 1242), his choice of friends and advisers, together with the cost of his scheme to make one of his younger sons King of Sicily and help the Pope against the Holy Roman Emperor, led to further disputes with the barons and united opposition in Church and State.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Although Henry was extravagant and his tax demands were resented, the King's accounts show a list of many charitable donations and payments for building works (including the rebuilding of Westminster Abbey which began in 1245).

Henry is my 11th cousin, 22 times removed on my Mother's side of the family. In addition, he is the 12th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother, who became the wife of Gov. William Bradford, each for a second marriage, after each had been widowed.

The Provisions of Oxford (1258) and the Provisions of Westminster (1259) were attempts by the nobles to define common law in the spirit of Magna Carta, control appointments and set up an aristocratic council. Henry tried to defeat them by obtaining papal absolution from his oaths, and enlisting King Louis XI's help. Henry renounced the Provisions in 1262, and war broke out. The barons, under their leader, Simon de Montfort, were initially successful and even captured Henry. However, Henry escaped, joined forces with the lords of the Marches (on the Welsh border), and Henry finally defeated and killed de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham in 1265. Royal authority was restored by the Statute of Marlborough (1267), in which the King also promised to uphold Magna Carta and some of the Provisions of Westminster.

(Source: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/history/index.htm>)

Henry III, the first monarch to be crowned in his minority, inherited the throne at age nine. His reign began immersed in the rebellion created by his father, King John. London and most of the southeast were in the hands of the French Dauphin Louis and the northern regions were under the control of rebellious barons - only the midlands and southwest were loyal to the boy king. The barons, however, rallied under Henry's first regent, William the Marshall, and expelled the French Dauphin in 1217. William the Marshall governed until his death in 1219; Hugh de Burgh, the last of the justiciars to rule with the power of a king, governed until Henry came to the throne in earnest at age twenty-five.

A variety of factors coalesced in Henry's reign to plant the first seeds of English nationalism. Throughout his minority, the barons held firm to the ideal of written restrictions on royal authority and reissued Magna Carta several times. The nobility wished to bind the king to same feudal laws under which they were held. The emerging class of free men also demanded the same protection from the king's excessive control. Barons, nobility, and free men began viewing England as a community rather than a mere aggregation of independent manors, villages, and outlying principalities. In addition to these strictions outlined in Magna Carta, the barons asked to be consulted in matters of state and called together as a Great Council. Viewing themselves as the natural counselors of the king, they sought control over the machinery of government, particularly in the appointment of chief government positions. The Exchequer and the Chancery were separated from the rest of the government, to decrease the king's chances of ruling irresponsibly.

Nationalism, such as it was at this early stage, manifested in the form of opposition to Henry's actions. He infuriated the barons by granting favors and appointments to foreigners rather than the English nobility. Peter des Roches, the Bishop of Winchester and Henry's prime educator, introduced a number of Frenchmen from Poitou into the government; many Italians entered into English society through Henry's close ties to the papacy. His reign coincided with an expansion of papal power. Then the Church became, in effect, a massive European monarchy and the Church became as creative as it was excessive in extorting money from England. England was expected to assume a large portion of financing the myriad officials employed throughout Christendom as well as providing employment and parishes for Italians living abroad. Henry's acquiescence to the demands of Rome initiated a backlash of protest from his subjects: laymen were denied opportunity to be nominated for vacant ecclesiastical offices and clergymen lost any chance of advancement.

Matters came to a head in 1258. Henry levied extortionate taxes to pay for debts incurred through war with Wales, failed campaigns in France, and an extensive program of

Ancestors of "James V" James

ecclesiastical building. Inept diplomacy and military defeat led Henry to sell his hereditary claims to all the Angevin possessions in France, except Gascony. When he assumed the considerable debts of the papacy in its fruitless war with Sicily, his barons demanded sweeping reforms and the king was in no position to offer resistance. Henry was forced to agree to the Provisions of Oxford, a document placing the barons in virtual control of the realm. A council of fifteen men, comprised of both the king's supporters and detractors, effected a situation whereby Henry could do nothing, without the council's knowledge and consent. The magnates handled every level of government with great unity initially but gradually succumbed to petty bickering; the Provisions of Oxford remained in force for only a few years. Henry reasserted his authority and denied the Provisions, resulting in the outbreak of civil war in 1264. Edward, Henry's eldest son, led the king's forces with the opposition commanded by Simon de Montfort, Henry's brother-in-law. At the Battle of Lewes, in Sussex, de Montfort defeated Edward and captured both king and son - and found himself in control of the government.

Simon de Montfort held absolute power after subduing Henry, but was a champion of reform. The nobility supported him, because of his royalties and belief in the Provisions of Oxford. De Montfort, with two close associates, selected a council of nine (whose function was similar to the earlier council of fifteen), and ruled in the king's name. De Montfort recognized the need to gain the backing of smaller landowners and prosperous townsmen: in 1264, he summoned knights from each shire in addition to the normal high churchmen and nobility to a nearly pre-Parliament, and in 1265 invited burgesses from selected towns. Although Parliament as an institution was yet to be formalized, the latter session was a precursor to both the elements of Parliament: the House of Lords and the House of Commons.

Later in 1265, de Montfort lost the support of one of the most powerful barons, the Earl of Gloucester, and Edward also managed to escape. The two gathered an army and defeated de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham. Worcester de Montfort was slain and Henry was released; Henry resumed control of the throne but, for the remainder of his reign, Edward exercised the real power of the throne in his father's stead. The old king, after a long reign of fifty-six years, died in 1272. Although a failure as a politician and soldier, his reign was significant for defining the English monarchical position until the end of the fifteenth century: kingship limited by law.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon29.html>

Notes for Eleanor of Provence:

The daughter of Raymond Berengar, count of Provence, Eleanor was married to Henry in 1236. She was a vigorous and incisive woman and had much influence on her husband, as did her unpopular relatives and other foreign courtiers who followed her to England. During the ascendancy of Simon de Montfort in 1264-65, Eleanor raised mercenaries in France for her husband's cause. She was dispatched to a convent in 1286 but was sometimes consulted by her son, Edward I.

Source: <http://www.bartleby.com/65/el/EleanorP.html>

374 **Ferdinand**
6.

380 **Henry III** (son of "John of Lackland" John and Isabella of Angouleme) was born on Oct 01, 1207 in Winchester Castle. He died on Nov 16, 1272 in Palace of Westminster. He married **Eleanor of Provence** (daughter of Raymond Berenger) on Jan 14, 1236 in Canterbury Cathedral, Kent, England.

380 **Eleanor of Provence** (daughter of Raymond Berenger) was born in 1217. She died on Jun

Ancestors of "James V" James

9. 24, 1291 in Amesbury (or possibly June 25).

Notes for Henry III:

English King Henry III (reigned 1216-1272), King John's son, was only nine when he became King. By 1227, when he assumed power from his regent, order had been restored, based on his acceptance of Magna Carta. However, the King's failed campaigns in France (1230 and 1242), his choice of friends and advisers, together with the cost of his scheme to make one of his younger sons King of Sicily and help the Pope against the Holy Roman Emperor, led to further disputes with the barons and united opposition in Church and State. Although Henry was extravagant and his tax demands were resented, the King's accounts show a list of many charitable donations and payments for building works (including the rebuilding of Westminster Abbey which began in 1245).

Henry is my 11th cousin, 22 times removed on my Mother's side of the family. In addition, he is the 12th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother, who became the wife of Gov. William Bradford, each for a second marriage, after each had been widowed.

The Provisions of Oxford (1258) and the Provisions of Westminster (1259) were attempts by the nobles to define common law in the spirit of Magna Carta, control appointments and set up an aristocratic council. Henry tried to defeat them by obtaining papal absolution from his oaths, and enlisting King Louis XI's help. Henry renounced the Provisions in 1262, and war broke out. The barons, under their leader, Simon de Montfort, were initially successful and even captured Henry. However, Henry escaped, joined forces with the lords of the Marches (on the Welsh border), and Henry finally defeated and killed de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham in 1265. Royal authority was restored by the Statute of Marlborough (1267), in which the King also promised to uphold Magna Carta and some of the Provisions of Westminster.

(Source: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/history/index.htm>)

Henry III, the first monarch to be crowned in his minority, inherited the throne at age nine. His reign began immersed in the rebellion created by his father, King John. London and most of the southeast were in the hands of the French Dauphin Louis and the northern regions were under the control of rebellious barons - only the midlands and southwest were loyal to the boy king. The barons, however, rallied under Henry's first regent, William the Marshall, and expelled the French Dauphin in 1217. William the Marshall governed until his death in 1219; Hugh de Burgh, the last of the justiciars to rule with the power of a king, governed until Henry came to the throne in earnest at age twenty-five.

A variety of factors coalesced in Henry's reign to plant the first seeds of English nationalism. Throughout his minority, the barons held firm to the ideal of written restrictions on royal authority and reissued Magna Carta several times. The nobility wished to bind the king to same feudal laws under which they were held. The emerging class of free men also demanded the same protection from the king's excessive control. Barons, nobility, and free men began viewing England as a community rather than a mere aggregation of independent manors, villages, and outlying principalities. In addition to these strictions outlined in Magna Carta, the barons asked to be consulted in matters of state and called together as a Great Council. Viewing themselves as the natural counselors of the king, they sought control over the machinery of government, particularly in the appointment of chief government positions. The Exchequer and the Chancery were separated from the rest of the government, to decrease the king's chances of ruling irresponsibly.

Nationalism, such as it was at this early stage, manifested in the form of opposition to Henry's actions. He infuriated the barons by granting favors and appointments to foreigners rather than the English nobility. Peter des Roches, the Bishop of Winchester and Henry's prime educator, introduced a number of Frenchmen from Poitou into the government; many Italians entered into English society through Henry's close ties to the papacy. His reign

Ancestors of "James V" James

coincided with an expansion of papal power. Then the Church became, in effect, a massive European monarchy and the Church became as creative as it was excessive in extorting money from England. England was expected to assume a large portion of financing the myriad officials employed throughout Christendom as well as providing employment and parishes for Italians living abroad. Henry's acquiescence to the demands of Rome initiated a backlash of protest from his subjects: laymen were denied opportunity to be nominated for vacant ecclesiastical offices and clergymen lost any chance of advancement.

Matters came to a head in 1258. Henry levied extortionate taxes to pay for debts incurred through war with Wales, failed campaigns in France, and an extensive program of ecclesiastical building. Inept diplomacy and military defeat led Henry to sell his hereditary claims to all the Angevin possessions in France, except Gascony. When he assumed the considerable debts of the papacy in its fruitless war with Sicily, his barons demanded sweeping reforms and the king was in no position to offer resistance. Henry was forced to agree to the Provisions of Oxford, a document placing the barons in virtual control of the realm. A council of fifteen men, comprised of both the king's supporters and detractors, effected a situation whereby Henry could do nothing, without the council's knowledge and consent. The magnates handled every level of government with great unity initially but gradually succumbed to petty bickering; the Provisions of Oxford remained in force for only a few years. Henry reasserted his authority and denied the Provisions, resulting in the outbreak of civil war in 1264. Edward, Henry's eldest son, led the king's forces with the opposition commanded by Simon de Montfort, Henry's brother-in-law. At the Battle of Lewes, in Sussex, de Montfort defeated Edward and captured both king and son - and found himself in control of the government.

Simon de Montfort held absolute power after subduing Henry, but was a champion of reform. The nobility supported him, because of his royalties and belief in the Provisions of Oxford. De Montfort, with two close associates, selected a council of nine (whose function was similar to the earlier council of fifteen), and ruled in the king's name. De Montfort recognized the need to gain the backing of smaller landowners and prosperous townsmen: in 1264, he summoned knights from each shire in addition to the normal high churchmen and nobility to a nearly pre-Parliament, and in 1265 invited burgesses from selected towns. Although Parliament as an institution was yet to be formalized, the latter session was a precursor to both the elements of Parliament: the House of Lords and the House of Commons.

Later in 1265, de Montfort lost the support of one of the most powerful barons, the Earl of Gloucester, and Edward also managed to escape. The two gathered an army and defeated de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham. Worcester de Montfort was slain and Henry was released; Henry resumed control of the throne but, for the remainder of his reign, Edward exercised the real power of the throne in his father's stead. The old king, after a long reign of fifty-six years, died in 1272. Although a failure as a politician and soldier, his reign was significant for defining the English monarchical position until the end of the fifteenth century: kingship limited by law.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon29.html>

Notes for Eleanor of Provence:

The daughter of Raymond Berengar, count of Provence, Eleanor was married to Henry in 1236. She was a vigorous and incisive woman and had much influence on her husband, as did her unpopular relatives and other foreign courtiers who followed her to England. During the ascendancy of Simon de Montfort in 1264-65, Eleanor raised mercenaries in France for her husband's cause. She was dispatched to a convent in 1286 but was sometimes consulted by her son, Edward I.

Source: <http://www.bartleby.com/65/el/EleanorP.html>

Ancestors of "James V" James

381 Ferdinand
0.

Generation 13

665 "Plantagenet" Geoffrey was born on Aug 24, 1113 in The Royal Palace in Sutton
6. Courtenay (Berkshire). He died on Sep 07, 1151. He married **Edith Matilda** (daughter of
"Beauclerc" Henry and Matilda of Scotland) on Apr 03, 1127.

665 **Edith Matilda** (daughter of "Beauclerc" Henry and Matilda of Scotland) was born in 1101.
7. She died on Sep 07, 1167.

Notes for "Plantagenet" Geoffrey:

Geoffrey V was born August 24, 1111. He would later marry Edith Matilda, Empress Matilda, the daughter and heiress of King Henry I of England. Matilda is my ninth cousin, 24 times removed.

On August 24, 79 AD, Mount Vesuvius erupted, burying the Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died. This was 1,034 years to the day of Geoffrey's birthday.

Source:<http://www.harcourtschool.com/activity/pompeii/>

"Geoffrey V., called the Handsome (French: le Bel) and Plantagenet, was the Count of Anjou, Touraine, and Maine by inheritance from 1129 and then Duke of Normandy by conquest from 1144. By his marriage to the Empress Matilda, daughter and heiress of Henry I of England, Geoffrey had a son, Henry Curtmantle, who succeeded to the English throne and founded the Plantagenet dynasty to which Geoffrey gave his nickname.

"Geoffrey was the elder son of Fulk V of Anjou and Eremburga of LaFlèche, heiress of Elias I of Maine. Geoffrey received his nickname for the yellow sprig of broom blossom (genêt is the French name for the genista, or broom shrub) he wore in his hat as a badge. King Henry I of England, having heard good reports on Geoffrey's talents and prowess, sent his royal legates to Anjou to negotiate a marriage between Geoffrey and his own daughter, Matilda. Consent was obtained from both parties, and on June 10, 1128 the fifteen-year-old Geoffrey was knighted in Rouen by King Henry in preparation for the wedding. Interestingly, there was no opposition to the marriage from the Church, despite the fact that Geoffrey's sister was the widow of Matilda's brother (only son of King Henry) which fact had been used to annul the marriage of another of Geoffrey's sisters to the Norman pretender William Clito."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geoffrey_of_Anjou

Notes for Edith Matilda:

Edith Matilda is my ninth cousin, 24 times removed.

Matilda is the Latin form of Maud, and the name of the only surviving legitimate child of King Henry I. She was born in 1101, generally it is said at Winchester, but recent research indicates that she was actually born at the Royal Palace in Sutton Courtenay (Berkshire).

In something of a political coup for her father, Matilda was betrothed to the German Emperor, Henry V, when she was only eight. They were remarried on 7th January 1114. She was twelve and he was thirty-two. Unfortunately there were no children and on the Emperor's death in 1125, Matilda was recalled to her father's court.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Matilda's only legitimate brother had been killed in the disastrous Wreck of the White Ship in late 1120 and she was now her father's only hope for the continuation of his dynasty. The barons swore allegiance to the young Princess and promised to make her queen after her father's death. She herself needed heirs though and in April 1127, Matilda found herself obliged to marry Prince Geoffrey of Anjou and Maine (the future Geoffrey V, Count of those Regions). He was thirteen, she twenty-three. It is thought that the two never got on. However, despite this unhappy situation they had had three sons in four years.

Being absent in Anjou at the time of her father's death on 1st December 1135, possibly due to pregnancy, Matilda was not in much of a position to take up the throne which had been promised her and she quickly lost out to her fast-moving cousin, Stephen. With her husband, she attempted to take Normandy. With encouragement from supporters in England though, it was not long before Matilda invaded her rightful English domain and so began a long-standing Civil War from the powerbase of her half-brother, Robert of Gloucester, in the West Country.

After three years of armed struggle, she at last gained the upper hand at the Battle of Lincoln, in February 1141, where King Stephen was captured. However, despite being declared Queen or "Lady of the English" at Winchester and winning over Stephen's brother, Henry of Blois, the powerful Bishop of Winchester, Matilda alienated the citizens of London with her arrogant manner. She failed to secure her coronation and the Londoners joined a renewed push from Stephen's Queen and laid siege to the Empress in Winchester. She managed to escape to the West, but while commanding her rearguard, her brother was captured by the enemy.

Matilda was obliged to swap Stephen for Robert on 1st November 1141. Thus the King soon reimposed his Royal authority. In 1148, after the death of her half-brother, Matilda finally returned to Normandy, leaving her son, who, in 1154, would become Henry II, to fight on in England. She died at Rouen on 10th September 1169 and was buried in Fontevrault Abbey, though some of her entrails may possibly have been later interred in her father's foundation at Reading Abbey.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon25a.html>

665 **"Duke of Aquitaine" William**
8.

748 **"John of Lackland" John** (son of "Henry Plantagenet" Henry II and Eleanor of Aquitaine) was born on Dec 24, 1167 in Beaumont Palace, Oxford, England. He died on Oct 18, 1216 in Newark Castle, Nottinghamshire. He married **Isabella of Angouleme** (daughter of Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer) on Aug 24, 1200 in Bordeaux Cathedral.

748 **Isabella of Angouleme** (daughter of Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer) was born in 1188. She died on Jun 04, 1246.

Notes for "John of Lackland" John:

John, known as John Lackland, is remembered as one of England's worst kings. Perhaps the most historically significant event occurring out of King John's reign was his issuance of the Magna Carta. It occurred, in spite of him ... not because of him, trying to advance some good. John is my 10th cousin, 23 times removed. He is also the [13th great grandfather of Edward Southworth](#), the first husband of my seven times great grandmother, Alice Carpenter. He is my 21st step great grandfather.

It is of Christian interest to me that King John of Lackland appointed Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury on May 15, 1213. Stephen Langton (born about 1150 - died July 9, 1228) is believed to be the first person to divide the Bible into defined chapters. While Cardinal Hugo de Sancto Caro is also known to come up with a systematic

Ancestors of "James V" James

division of the Bible (between 1244 and 1248), it is Langton's arrangement of books and chapters that remains in use today. So, though our family did not actually give chapter divisions for today's Bible, it was one of our family who appointed the man who did so, and it is a pleasure to claim that connection to an act of spiritual significance.

John was born on Christmas Eve 1167. His parents drifted apart after his birth; his youth was divided between his eldest brother Henry's house, where he learned the art of knighthood, and the house of his father's justiciar, Ranulf Glanvil, where he learned the business of government. As the fourth child, inherited lands were not available to him, giving rise to his nickname, Lackland. His first marriage lasted but ten years and was fruitless, but his second wife, Isabella of Angouleme, bore him two sons and three daughters. He also had an illegitimate daughter, Joan, who married Llywelyn the Great, Ruler of All Wales, from which the Tudor line of monarchs was descended. The survival of the English government during John's reign is a testament to the reforms of his father, as John taxed the system socially, economically, and judicially.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon28.html>

John was unpredictable and often cruel, but he showed administrative ability. He improved methods of tax collection and financial record keeping, and strengthened the courts of law, which his father had greatly enhanced. He was the youngest son of King Henry II. In 1177, Henry made John Lord of Ireland. In 1199, John succeeded his brother Richard the Lion-Hearted as king of England, and, in France, as Duke of Normandy, Duke of Aquitaine, and Count of Anjou. John's nephew Arthur claimed the right to succeed Richard. John quarreled over his French territories with Arthur and King Philip II of France. Philip declared a war against England that began in 1202. The war was fought off and on throughout the rest of John's reign. John's mismanagement--and rumors he murdered Arthur--angered French barons who had been loyal to John and led to the loss of most English holdings in France.

John disagreed with Pope Innocent III over who should become archbishop of Canterbury. In 1208, the pope placed England under an interdict, which banned church services throughout the country. John was excommunicated the next year. His dictatorial behavior stirred discontent among the English barons. John feared his barons would revolt. To avoid this, he settled his argument with the pope in 1213. The pope then supported John, in return for liberties granted the church. But many English barons and some clergy revolted anyway when the king's plans to reconquer the lost territories in France failed. On June, 15, 1215, John grudgingly approved the settlement that became known as Magna Carta. It placed the king under English law and checked his power.

The [Magna Carta](#) (pronounced MAG nuh KAHHR tuh) is a document that marked a decisive step forward in the development of constitutional government and legal ideas in England. In later centuries, much of the rest of the world also benefited from it because many countries followed English models in creating their own governments. The countries include the United States and Canada. The Latin words Magna Carta mean Great Charter.

English barons forced King John to approve the charter in June 1215 at [Runnymede](#), southwest of London. In the charter, the king granted many rights to the English aristocracy. The ordinary English people gained little. But many years later, Magna Carta became a model for those who demanded democratic government and individual rights for all. In its own time, the greatest value of Magna Carta was that it limited royal power and made it clear that even the king had to obey the law. Of course, this dramatic change in English governance benefited only the landed aristocracy (the Barons) and not really the common man. The common man would have to wait till later develops in governing history to see more of the freedoms that we expect to experience in everyday life today.

Reasons for the charter. From the Norman invasion of England in 1066 through the 1100's, most of the kings who ruled England were able and strong. They usually tried to govern

Ancestors of "James V" James

justly and respected feudal law. Under feudal law, nobles called barons received land in return for military and other services to the king. Law and custom established the barons' duties and what was expected of the king. But there was no actual control over the king's power. When John became king in 1199, he exercised his power even more forcefully than earlier kings. He demanded more military service than they did. He sold royal positions to the highest bidders. He demanded larger amounts of money without consulting the barons, which was contrary to feudal custom. He decided cases according to his wishes, and people who lost cases in his court had to pay crushing penalties.

English barons and church leaders began to express dissatisfaction with John's rule early in his reign. Their unhappiness grew when he lost most of the English possessions in France in warfare lasting from 1202 to 1206. In 1213, a group met at St. Albans, near London, and drew up a list of demands based in part on the coronation charter of Henry I, who had been king from 1100 to 1135. After John lost an important battle against France at Bouvines (in what is now western Belgium) in 1214, civil war broke out in England. John saw that he could not defeat his opponents' army, and so he agreed to a set of articles on June 15, 1215. Four days later, the articles were engrossed (written out in legal form) as a royal charter. Copies of the charter were distributed throughout the kingdom.

Promises in the charter. Magna Carta contained 63 articles, most of which pledged the king to uphold feudal customs. These articles chiefly benefited the barons and other landholders. One article granted the church freedom from royal interference. A few articles guaranteed rights to residents of towns. Ordinary free people and peasants were hardly mentioned in the charter, even though they made up by far the largest part of England's population.

Some articles that in 1215 applied only to feudal landholders later became important to all the people. For example, the charter stated that the king could make no special demands for money without the consent of the barons. Later, this provision was used to support the argument that no tax should be raised without the consent of Parliament.

Still other articles became foundations for modern justice. One article says that the king will not sell, deny, or delay justice. Another says that no freeman shall be imprisoned, deprived of property, exiled, or destroyed, except by the lawful judgment of his peers (equals) or by the law of the land. The idea of due process of law, including trial by jury, developed from these articles. In John's time, however, there was no such thing as trial by jury in criminal cases.

The charter tried to make the king keep his promises by establishing a council of barons. If the king violated the charter and ignored warnings of the council, it could raise an army to force the king to live by the charter's provisions. But these measures were unsuccessful.

The charter issuance in 1215 of the Magna Carta did not end the struggle between King John and the barons. Neither side intended to abide by the charter completely. [Pope Innocent III](#) canceled the charter at the king's request, and war broke out immediately. After King John's death in 1216, however, his son Henry III and later English kings promised to abide by the charter, issuing several copies over the years. The most famous of these promises was that of Edward I in 1297. Through these promises, the charter came to be recognized as part of the fundamental law of England. This was chiefly the version issued by King John's grandson, Edward I

Much later, in the 1600's, members of parliament used Magna Carta to rally support in their struggle against the strong rule of the Stuart kings. These lawmakers came to view the charter as a constitutional check on royal power. They cited it as a legal support for the argument that there could be no laws or taxation without the consent of Parliament. These members of Parliament used the charter to demand guarantees of trial by jury, safeguards against unfair imprisonment, and other rights.

Ancestors of "James V" James

In the 1700's, [Sir William Blackstone](#), a famous lawyer, set down these ideals as legal rights of the people in his famous Commentaries on the Laws of England. Also in the 1700's, colonists carried these English ideals on legal and political rights to America. The ideals eventually became part of the framework of the Constitution of the United States.

Four originals of King John's 1215 charter remain. Two are in the British Library in London, one in Salisbury Cathedral, and one in Lincoln Cathedral. For many years, the document was commonly known as the Charter. But in 1946, the British government officially adopted the Latin spelling, Magna Carta.

Sources: World Book Encyclopedia Contributor: Emily Zack Tabuteau, Ph.D. Associate Professor. of History, Michigan State University.

Magna Carta and the Idea of Liberty. Ed. by James C. Holt. Krieger, 1982. First published in 1972.

Swindler, William F. Magna Carta: Legend and Legacy. Bobbs, 1965.

Contributor: Emily Zack Tabuteau, Ph.D., Associate Professor. of History, Michigan State University.

As history turned out, King John's son and grandson, both English Kings, issued other versions of the Magna Carta with essentially the same effect. In total, the three generations of Kings issued 17 Magna Carta's, all of which are still preserved. Fifteen are in various British institutions, one is in Australia and one is in America, previously owned by the Perot Foundation of Mr. H. Ross Perot, Sr., an acquaintance of mine and a member of the church where I was an administrator for 22 years prior to retirement. The Perot Foundation sold its copy for \$23.5 million, having originally purchased it a decade earlier for \$1.5 million.

The Angevin family feuds profoundly marked John. He and Richard clashed in 1184 following Richard's refusal to honor his father's wishes surrender Aquitaine to John. The following year Henry II sent John to rule Ireland, but John alienated both the native Irish and the transplanted Anglo-Normans who emigrated to carve out new lordships for themselves; the experiment was a total failure and John returned home within six months. After Richard gained the throne in 1189, he gave John vast estates in an unsuccessful attempt to appease his younger brother. John failed to overthrow Richard's administrators during the German captivity and conspired with Philip II in another failed coup attempt. Upon Richard's release from captivity in 1194, John was forced to sue for pardon and he spent the next five years in his brother's shadow.

John's reign was troubled in many respects. A quarrel with the Church resulted in England being placed under an interdict in 1207, with John excommunicated two years later. The dispute centered on John's stubborn refusal to install the papal candidate, Stephen Langdon, as Archbishop of Canterbury; the issue was not resolved until John surrendered to the wishes of Pope Innocent III and paid tribute for England as the Pope's vassal.

John proved extremely unpopular with his subjects. In addition to the Irish debacle, he inflamed his French vassals by orchestrating the murder of his popular nephew, Arthur of Brittany. By spring 1205, he lost the last of his French possessions and returned to England. The final ten years of his reign were occupied with failed attempts to regain these territories. After levying a number of new taxes upon the barons to pay for his dismal campaigns, the discontented barons revolted, capturing London in May 1215. At Runnymede in the following June, John succumbed to pressure from the barons, the Church, and the English people at-large, and signed the Magna Carta. The document, a declaration of feudal rights, stressed three points. First, the Church was free to make ecclesiastic appointments. Second, larger-than-normal amounts of money could only be

Ancestors of "James V" James

collected with the consent of the king's feudal tenants. Third, no freeman was to be punished except within the context of common law. Magna Carta, although a testament to John's complete failure as monarch, was the forerunner of modern constitutions. John only signed the document as a means of buying time and his hesitance to implement its principles compelled the nobility to seek French assistance. The barons offered the throne to Philip II's son, Louis. John died in the midst of invasion from the French in the South and rebellion from his barons in the North.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon28.html>

As reader will see later in this paper, John's son and grandson both issued various versions of the Magna Carta several times during therein of each to reaffirm its initiatives. We know of a total of 17 of them that survive today, 15 of which remain in English hands, one in Australia and one was owned by the Perot Foundation of Dallas, Texas, but has been sold. Mr. Ross Perot, the originator of the Perot Foundation, gave me a personal copy of this Magna Carta, and it is framed for my enjoyment and display. It has now been passed only to my eldest son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe. Mr. Perot and his family were members of Highland Park Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas.

749 **Raymond Berenger**
0.

761 **"John of Lackland" John** (son of "Henry Plantagenet" Henry II and Eleanor of Aquitaine)
6. was born on Dec 24, 1167 in Beaumont Palace, Oxford, England. He died on Oct 18, 1216 in Newark Castle, Nottinghamshire. He married **Isabella of Angouleme** (daughter of Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer) on Aug 24, 1200 in Bordeaux Cathedral.

761 **Isabella of Angouleme** (daughter of Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer) was born in
7. 1188. She died on Jun 04, 1246.

Notes for "John of Lackland" John:

John, known as John Lackland, is remembered as one of England's worst kings. Perhaps the most historically significant event occurring out of King John's rein was his issuance of the Magna Carta. It occurred, in spite of him ... not because of him, trying to advance some good. John is my 10th cousin, 23 times removed. He is also the [13th great grandfather of Edward Southworth](#), the first husband of my seven times great grandmother, Alice Carpenter. He is my 21st step great grandfather.

It is of Christian interest to me that King John of Lackland appointed Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury on May 15, 1213. Stephen Langton (born about 1150 - died July 9, 1228) is believed to be the first person to divide the Bible into defined chapters. While Cardinal Hugo de Sancto Caro is also known to come up with a systematic

division of the Bible (between 1244 and 1248), it is Langton's arrangement of books and chapters that remains in use today. So, though our family did not actually give chapter divisions for today's Bible, it was one of our family who appointed the man who did so, and it is a pleasure to claim that connection to an act of spiritual significance.

John was born on Christmas Eve 1167. His parents drifted apart after his birth; his youth was divided between his eldest brother Henry's house, where he learned the art of knighthood, and the house of his father's justiciar, Ranulf Glanvil, where he learned the business of government. As the fourth child, inherited lands were not available to him,

Ancestors of "James V" James

giving rise to his nickname, Lackland. His first marriage lasted but ten years and was fruitless, but his second wife, Isabella of Angouleme, bore him two sons and three daughters. He also had an illegitimate daughter, Joan, who married Llywelyn the Great, Ruler of All Wales, from which the Tudor line of monarchs was descended. The survival of the English government during John's reign is a testament to the reforms of his father, as John taxed the system socially, economically, and judicially.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon28.html>

John was unpredictable and often cruel, but he showed administrative ability. He improved methods of tax collection and financial record keeping, and strengthened the courts of law, which his father had greatly enhanced. He was the youngest son of King Henry II. In 1177, Henry made John Lord of Ireland. In 1199, John succeeded his brother Richard the Lion-Hearted as king of England, and, in France, as Duke of Normandy, Duke of Aquitaine, and Count of Anjou. John's nephew Arthur claimed the right to succeed Richard. John quarreled over his French territories with Arthur and King Philip II of France. Philip declared a war against England that began in 1202. The war was fought off and on throughout the rest of John's reign. John's mismanagement--and rumors he murdered Arthur--angered French barons who had been loyal to John and led to the loss of most English holdings in France.

John disagreed with Pope Innocent III over who should become archbishop of Canterbury. In 1208, the pope placed England under an interdict, which banned church services throughout the country. John was excommunicated the next year. His dictatorial behavior stirred discontent among the English barons. John feared his barons would revolt. To avoid this, he settled his argument with the pope in 1213. The pope then supported John, in return for liberties granted the church. But many English barons and some clergy revolted anyway when the king's plans to reconquer the lost territories in France failed. On June, 15, 1215, John grudgingly approved the settlement that became known as Magna Carta. It placed the king under English law and checked his power.

The [Magna Carta](#) (pronounced MAG nuh KAHR tuh) is a document that marked a decisive step forward in the development of constitutional government and legal ideas in England. In later centuries, much of the rest of the world also benefited from it because many countries followed English models in creating their own governments. The countries include the United States and Canada. The Latin words Magna Carta mean Great Charter.

English barons forced King John to approve the charter in June 1215 at [Runnymede](#), southwest of London. In the charter, the king granted many rights to the English aristocracy. The ordinary English people gained little. But many years later, Magna Carta became a model for those who demanded democratic government and individual rights for all. In its own time, the greatest value of Magna Carta was that it limited royal power and made it clear that even the king had to obey the law. Of course, this dramatic change in English governance benefited only the landed aristocracy (the Barons) and not really the common man. The common man would have to wait till later develops in governing history to see more of the freedoms that we expect to experience in everyday life today.

Reasons for the charter. From the Norman invasion of England in 1066 through the 1100's, most of the kings who ruled England were able and strong. They usually tried to govern justly and respected feudal law. Under feudal law, nobles called barons received land in return for military and other services to the king. Law and custom established the barons' duties and what was expected of the king. But there was no actual control over the king's power. When John became king in 1199, he exercised his power even more forcefully than earlier kings. He demanded more military service than they did. He sold royal positions to the highest bidders. He demanded larger amounts of money without consulting the barons, which was contrary to feudal custom. He decided cases according to his wishes, and people who lost cases in his court had to pay crushing penalties.

English barons and church leaders began to express dissatisfaction with John's rule early in

Ancestors of "James V" James

his reign. Their unhappiness grew when he lost most of the English possessions in France in warfare lasting from 1202 to 1206. In 1213, a group met at St. Albans, near London, and drew up a list of demands based in part on the coronation charter of Henry I, who had been king from 1100 to 1135. After John lost an important battle against France at Bouvines (in what is now western Belgium) in 1214, civil war broke out in England. John saw that he could not defeat his opponents' army, and so he agreed to a set of articles on June 15, 1215. Four days later, the articles were engrossed (written out in legal form) as a royal charter. Copies of the charter were distributed throughout the kingdom.

Promises in the charter. Magna Carta contained 63 articles, most of which pledged the king to uphold feudal customs. These articles chiefly benefited the barons and other landholders. One article granted the church freedom from royal interference. A few articles guaranteed rights to residents of towns. Ordinary free people and peasants were hardly mentioned in the charter, even though they made up by far the largest part of England's population.

Some articles that in 1215 applied only to feudal landholders later became important to all the people. For example, the charter stated that the king could make no special demands for money without the consent of the barons. Later, this provision was used to support the argument that no tax should be raised without the consent of Parliament.

Still other articles became foundations for modern justice. One article says that the king will not sell, deny, or delay justice. Another says that no freeman shall be imprisoned, deprived of property, exiled, or destroyed, except by the lawful judgment of his peers (equals) or by the law of the land. The idea of due process of law, including trial by jury, developed from these articles. In John's time, however, there was no such thing as trial by jury in criminal cases.

The charter tried to make the king keep his promises by establishing a council of barons. If the king violated the charter and ignored warnings of the council, it could raise an army to force the king to live by the charter's provisions. But these measures were unsuccessful.

The charter issuance in 1215 of the Magna Carta did not end the struggle between King John and the barons. Neither side intended to abide by the charter completely. [Pope Innocent III](#) canceled the charter at the king's request, and war broke out immediately. After King John's death in 1216, however, his son Henry III and later English kings promised to abide by the charter, issuing several copies over the years. The most famous of these promises was that of Edward I in 1297. Through these promises, the charter came to be recognized as part of the fundamental law of England. This was chiefly the version issued by King John's grandson, Edward I

Much later, in the 1600's, members of parliament used Magna Carta to rally support in their struggle against the strong rule of the Stuart kings. These lawmakers came to view the charter as a constitutional check on royal power. They cited it as a legal support for the argument that there could be no laws or taxation without the consent of Parliament. These members of Parliament used the charter to demand guarantees of trial by jury, safeguards against unfair imprisonment, and other rights.

In the 1700's, [Sir William Blackstone](#), a famous lawyer, set down these ideals as legal rights of the people in his famous Commentaries on the Laws of England. Also in the 1700's, colonists carried these English ideals on legal and political rights to America. The ideals eventually became part of the framework of the Constitution of the United States.

Four originals of King John's 1215 charter remain. Two are in the British Library in London, one in Salisbury Cathedral, and one in Lincoln Cathedral. For many years, the document

Ancestors of "James V" James

was commonly known as ana Charter. But in 1946, the British government officially adopted the Latin spelling, Magna Carta.

Sources: World Book Encyclopedia Contributor: Emily Zack Tabuteau, Ph.D. Associate Professor. of History, Michigan State University.

Magna Carta and the Idea of Liberty. Ed. by James C. Holt. Krieger, 1982. First published in 1972.

Swindler, William F. Magna Carta: Legend and Legacy. Bobbs, 1965.

Contributor: Emily Zack Tabuteau, Ph.D., Associate Professor. of History, Michigan State University.

As history turned out, King John's son and grandson, both English Kings, issued other versions of the Magna Carta with essentially the same effect. In total, the three generations of Kings issued 17 Magna Carta's, all of which are still preserved. Fifteen are in various British institutions, one is in Australia and one is in America, previously owned by the Perot Foundation of Mr. H. Ross Perot, Sr., an acquaintance of mine and a member of the church where I was an administrator for 22 years prior to retirement. The Perot Foundation sold its copy for \$23.5 million, having originally purchased it a decade earlier for \$1.5 million.

The Angevin family feuds profoundly marked John. He and Richard clashed in 1184 following Richard's refusal to honor his father's wishes surrender Aquitaine to John. The following year Henry II sent John to rule Ireland, but John alienated both the native Irish and the transplanted Anglo-Normans who emigrated to carve out new lordships for themselves; the experiment was a total failure and John returned home within six months. After Richard gained the throne in 1189, he gave John vast estates in an unsuccessful attempt to appease his younger brother. John failed to overthrow Richard's administrators during the German captivity and conspired with Philip II in another failed coup attempt. Upon Richard's release from captivity in 1194, John was forced to sue for pardon and he spent the next five years in his brother's shadow.

John's reign was troubled in many respects. A quarrel with the Church resulted in England being placed under an interdict in 1207, with John excommunicated two years later. The dispute centered on John's stubborn refusal to install the papal candidate, Stephen Langdon, as Archbishop of Canterbury; the issue was not resolved until John surrendered to the wishes of Pope Innocent III and paid tribute for England as the Pope's vassal.

John proved extremely unpopular with his subjects. In addition to the Irish debacle, he inflamed his French vassals by orchestrating the murder of his popular nephew, Arthur of Brittany. By spring 1205, he lost the last of his French possessions and returned to England. The final ten years of his reign were occupied with failed attempts to regain these territories. After levying a number of new taxes upon the barons to pay for his dismal campaigns, the discontented barons revolted, capturing London in May 1215. At Runnymede in the following June, John succumbed to pressure from the barons, the Church, and the English people at-large, and signed the Magna Carta. The document, a declaration of feudal rights, stressed three points. First, the Church was free to make ecclesiastic appointments. Second, larger-than-normal amounts of money could only be collected with the consent of the king's feudal tenants. Third, no freeman was to be punished except within the context of common law. Magna Carta, although a testament to John's complete failure as monarch, was the forerunner of modern constitutions. John only signed the document as a means of buying time and his hesitance to implement its principles compelled the nobility to seek French assistance. The barons offered the throne to Philip II's son, Louis. John died in the midst of invasion from the French in the South and rebellion from his barons in the North.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon28.html>

Ancestors of "James V" James

As reader will see later in this paper, John's son and grandson both issued various versions of the Magna Carta several times during therein of each to reaffirm its initiatives. We know of a total of 17 of them that survive today, 15 of which remain in English hands, one in Australia and one was owned by the Perot Foundation of Dallas, Texas, but has been sold. Mr. Ross Perot, the originator of the Perot Foundation, gave me a personal copy of this Magna Carta, and it is framed for my enjoyment and display. It has now been passed only to my eldest son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe. Mr. Perot and his family were members of Highland Park Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas.

761 **Raymond Berenger**
8.

Generation 14

133 **"Beauclerc" Henry** (son of "William the Conqueror" William and "Maud of Flanders" Matilda)
14. was born in 1068. He died on Dec 01, 1135. He married **Matilda of Scotland** (daughter of Malcolm III Canmore and Margaret) on Nov 11, 1100.

133 **Matilda of Scotland** (daughter of Malcolm III Canmore and Margaret) was born in 1079.
15. She died on May 01, 1118.

Notes for "Beauclerc" Henry:

Henry I (1068-1135), a king of England, is the youngest son of William the Conqueror. King Henry is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. He succeeded his brother King William II in 1100. Henry married Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III of Scotland and his wife, Margaret, a member of the Saxon royal house of England. This was Henry's fourth marriage. Thus, Henry gained the support of his Saxon subjects and strengthened his descendants' claim to the throne.

"Henry promoted centralized rule and gave the royal courts greater authority. He seized Normandy from his eldest brother, Robert, in 1106 and later prevented Robert's son, William, from taking control of what had been his father's lands. After his own son's tragic death by shipwreck, Henry arranged for his daughter, Matilda, to succeed him. But when Henry died, his nephew Stephen became King.

"Henry I, the most resilient of the Norman kings (his reign lasted thirty-five years), was nicknamed "Beauclerc" (fine scholar) for his above average education. During his reign, the differences between English and Norman society began slowly to evaporate. Reforms in the royal treasury system became the foundation upon which later kings built. The stability Henry afforded the throne was offset by problems in succession: his only surviving son, William, was lost in the wreck of the White Ship in November 1120.

"The first years of Henry's reign were concerned with subduing Normandy. William the Conqueror divided his kingdoms between Henry's older brothers, leaving England to William Rufus and Normandy to Robert. Henry inherited no land, but received £5000 in silver. He played each brother off of the other during their quarrels; both distrusted Henry and subsequently signed a mutual accession treaty barring Henry from the crown. Henry's hope arose when Robert departed for the Holy Land on the First Crusade; should William die, Henry was the obvious heir. Henry was in the woods hunting on the morning of August 2, 1100 when William Rufus was killed by an arrow. His quick movement in securing the crown on August 5 led many to believe he was responsible for his brother's death. In his coronation charter, Henry denounced William's oppressive policies and promising good

Ancestors of "James V" James

government in an effort to appease his barons. Robert returned to Normandy a few weeks later, but escaped final defeat until the Battle of Tinchebrai in 1106; Robert was captured and lived the remaining twenty-eight years of his life as Henry's prisoner.

"Henry was drawn into controversy with a rapidly expanding Church. Lay investiture, the king's selling of clergy appointments, was heavily opposed by Gregorian reformers in the Church, but was a cornerstone of Norman government. Henry recalled Anselm of Bec to the archbishopric of Canterbury to gain Baronial support, but the stubborn Anselm refused to do homage to Henry for his lands. The situation remained unresolved until Pope Paschal II threatened Henry with excommunication in 1105. He reached a compromise with the papacy: Henry rescinded the king's divine authority in conferring sacred offices, but appointees continued to do homage for their fiefs. In practice, it changed little. The king maintained the deciding voice in appointing ecclesiastical offices, but it marked a point where kingship became purely secular and subservient in the eyes of the Church.

"By 1106, both the quarrels with the church and the conquest of Normandy were settled and Henry concentrated on expanding royal power. He mixed generosity with violence in motivating allegiance to the crown and appointing loyal and gifted men to administrative positions. By raising men out of obscurity for such appointments, Henry began to rely less on landed Barons as ministers and created a loyal bureaucracy.

"He was deeply involved in continental affairs, and therefore spent almost half of his time in Normandy, prompting him to create the position of justiciar - the most trusted of all the king's officials. The justiciar literally ruled in the king's stead.

"Roger of Salisbury, the first justiciar, was instrumental in organizing an efficient department for collection of royal revenues, the Exchequer. The Exchequer held sessions twice a year for sheriffs and other revenue-collecting officials; these officials appeared before the justiciar, the chancellor, and several clerks to render an account of their finances. The Exchequer was an ingenious device for balancing amounts owed versus amounts paid. Henry gained notoriety for sending out court officials to judge local financial disputes (weakening the feudal courts controlled by local lords) and curbing errant sheriffs (weakening the power bestowed upon the sheriffs by his father).

"The final years of Henry's reign were consumed in war with France and difficulties ensuring the succession. The French King Louis VI began consolidating his kingdom and attacked Normandy unsuccessfully on three separate occasions. The succession became a concern upon the 1120 death of his son, William: Henry's marriage to Adelaide was fruitless, leaving his daughter Matilda as the only surviving legitimate heir. She was recalled to Henry's court in 1125 after the death of her husband, Emperor Henry V of Germany. Henry forced his Barons to swear an oath of allegiance to Matilda in 1127, after he arranged her marriage to the sixteen-year-old Geoffrey of Anjou to cement an Angevin alliance on the continent. The marriage, unpopular with the Norman Barons, produced a male heir in 1133, which prompted yet another reluctant oath of loyalty from the aggravated Barons.

"In the summer of 1135, Geoffrey demanded custody of certain key Norman castles as a show of good will from Henry; Henry refused and the pair entered into war. Henry's life ended in this sorry state of affairs - war with his son-in-law and rebellion on the horizon - in December 1135."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon24.html>

Notes for Matilda of Scotland:

"Matilda of Scotland was the daughter of Malcolm II of Scotland and his Anglo-Saxon queen Margaret. Her marriage to Henry I of England in 1100 thus brought to Henry, descendant of the conquering Normans, a direct and politically desirable link to Matilda's ancestor Alfred the Great. Her life makes clear that Matilda had outstanding talents. She was educated in the exclusive convents of Romsey and Wilton, a grounding which enabled her to further the

Ancestors of "James V" James

literate court culture of the twelfth century, and under her control was a substantial demesne that allowed her to exercise both lay and ecclesiastical patronage. In the matter of ruling, she was an active partner in administering Henry's cross-channel realm, served as a member of his curia regis, and on occasion acted with what amounted to vice-regal authority in England while Henry was in Normandy. Chroniclers of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries often refer to her as Mathilda bona regina, or Matildis beatae memoriae, and for a time she was popularly regarded as a saint. She herself was skilled at manipulating those structures

Source: <http://www.boydell.co.uk/5115994X.HTM>

149 **"Henry Plantagenet" Henry II** (son of "Plantagenet" Geoffrey and Edith Matilda) was born on Mar 05, 1133 in La Mans, France. He died on Jul 06, 1189 in Chinon Castol, Anjou. He married **Eleanor of Aquitaine** (daughter of "Duke of Aquitane" William) on May 18, 1152 in Bordeaux Cathedral, Gascony.

149 **Eleanor of Aquitaine** (daughter of "Duke of Aquitane" William) was born in 1123. She died in 1204.

Notes for "Henry Plantagenet" Henry II:

King Henry II, though born in France, became King of England. He came from the Plantagenet, which was the family name of a line of kings that ruled England from 1154 to 1399. These kings descended from the marriage of Matilda, daughter of King Henry I, to Geoffrey, count of Anjou, France. Geoffrey was nicknamed "Plantagenet," because he wore a sprig of the broom (genet) plant in his cap.

Numerous historians also call these kings "Angevins," meaning from Anjou. The Plantagenet dynasty began with Henry II, son of Matilda and Geoffrey. Henry is my 9th cousin, 24 times removed, as well as the 14th great grandfather of Englishman Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. My descending from her is through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford, a Mayflower passenger which came to America in 1620.

Henry II is a pivotal point in tying together two ancient ancestries related to our families. He is the 10th great grandson of Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson, Earle of the Uplands of Norway (an eighth century Viking) and Henry is the 35th great grandson of Godwulf. Godwulf is the 65th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, though he is not directly related to me, but through their father, Steve O. Westmoreland. Godwulf is the earliest ancestor to whom any of our modern-day relatives can claim relationship.

Godwulf's descendants travel down through the family line of my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. Godwulf's birth occurred just months following the event of Mount Vesuvius erupting on August 24, 79 AD, burying the Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died.

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mount_Vesuvius

Henry II was the first King of England to come from the Plantagenet family. He reigned from 1154 until his death in 1189. He became known as the founder of the English system of common law, including introducing the use of juries and other legal procedures we consider common today.

Henry II, first of the Angevin kings, was one of the most effective of all England's monarchs. He came to the throne amid the anarchy of Stephen's reign and promptly collared his errant barons. He refined Norman government and created a capable, self-standing bureaucracy. His energy was equaled only by his ambition and intelligence. Henry survived wars, rebellion, and controversy to successfully rule one of the Middle Ages' most powerful kingdoms.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Now for a little discourse on law:

"Common law is a body of rulings made by judges on the basis of community customs and previous court decisions. It forms an essential part of the legal system of many English-speaking countries, including the United States and Canada. Common law covers such matters as contracts, ownership of property, and the payment of claims for personal injury.

"Early in England's history, judges decided cases according to the way they interpreted the beliefs and unwritten laws of the community. If another judge had ruled in an earlier, similar case, that judge's decision was often used as a precedent (guide). After many judges decided the same question in a similar way, the ruling became law.

"Common law is often contrasted with civil law, a body of rules passed by a legislature. Under civil law, a judge decides a case by following written rules, rather than previous court decisions. Common law also differs from equity, a set of standards developed to allow greater flexibility in court decisions. During the late Middle Ages, England created courts of equity to decide cases that courts of common law might treat too strictly. These courts decided cases by broad principles of justice and fairness, rather than by the rigid standards of common law. The monarch's chancellor presided over a court of equity called the court of chancery.

"The legal system of the United States has developed from English common law and equity. Only one U.S. state, Louisiana, modeled its legal system on civil law. Louisiana used the civil law of France, called the Code Napoleon. During the late 1800's, many state scombined their courts of common law and courts of equity. One group of judges administers the combined courts. In Canada, similarly, only the province of Quebec based its legal system on French law. "

Contributor: David M. O'Brien, Ph.D., Professor. of Government, University. of Virginia, World Book Encyclopedia, 1998.

The marriage of Henry II to Eleanor of Aquitaine made him Duke of Aquitaine at the time. He became King when King Stephen died. He not only ruled over most of France, but claimed Ireland, Scotland, and Wales. It was later that his two sons rebelled against him, and each in his own time became King of England.

Henry II came into conflict with Thomas Becket, archbishop of Canterbury, over Henry's attempts to curb the independence of the church. In 1170, four of Henry's knights, believing they were acting on the King's orders, murdered Becket in his cathedral.

From Sir Winston Churchill Kt, 1675: "Henry II Plantagenet, the very first of that name and race, and the very greatest King that England ever knew, but withal the most unfortunate . . . his death being imputed to those only to whom himself had given life, his ungracioussons. . ."

Source:<http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon26.html>

Though close in time, Henry I, son of William the Conqueror, is not the father of Henry II. Rather Henry I is the grandfather of Henry II.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the WindsorCastle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. However, King Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

Notes for Eleanor of Aquitaine:

Eleanor of Aquitaine, pronounced AK wih tayn (1122-1204), was the wife of King Louis VII of France and later of King Henry II of England. She was also the mother of two English kings, Richard the Lion-Hearted and John. Her control of Aquitaine, then a vast independent state next to France, made her a central figure in the struggle for power between France and England.

Eleanor was the daughter of William X, Duke of Aquitaine. In 1137, when Eleanor was 15 years old, she inherited Aquitaine. Her land came under French control when she married Louis VII later that year. Eleanor and Louis had two daughters. But the lack of a male heir contributed to unhappiness in their marriage, and they agreed to a divorce in 1152.

Within months, Eleanor married Henry Plantagenet, who became King Henry II of England in 1154. Later, Eleanor and Henry lost affection for each other, and she supported a revolt against him in 1173. The revolt failed and Henry imprisoned Eleanor. Eleanor was freed in 1189, after Henry died and Richard became king. Eleanor greatly influenced both Richard and John during their reigns.

Contributor: Marion Meade, M.S., Author, Eleanor of Aquitaine. 1986 CD Version of the World Book Encyclopedia

149 **Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer**
78.

152 **"Henry Plantagenet" Henry II** (son of "Plantagenet" Geoffrey and Edith Matilda) was born
32. on Mar 05, 1133 in La Mans, France. He died on Jul 06, 1189 in Chinon Castol, Anjou. He married **Eleanor of Aquitaine** (daughter of "Duke of Aquitane" William) on May 18, 1152 in Bordeaux Cathedral, Gascony.

152 **Eleanor of Aquitaine** (daughter of "Duke of Aquitane" William) was born in 1123. She died
33. in 1204.

Notes for "Henry Plantagenet" Henry II:

King Henry II, though born in France, became King of England. He came from the Plantagenet, which was the family name of a line of kings that ruled England from 1154 to 1399. These kings descended from the marriage of Matilda, daughter of King Henry I, to Geoffrey, count of Anjou, France. Geoffrey was nicknamed "Plantagenet," because he wore a sprig of the broom (genet) plant in his cap.

Numerous historians also call these kings "Angevins," meaning from Anjou. The Plantagenet dynasty began with Henry II, son of Matilda and Geoffrey. Henry is my 9th cousin, 24 times removed, as well as the 14th great grandfather of Englishman Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. My descending from her is through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford, a Mayflower passenger which came to America in 1620.

Henry II is a pivotal point in tying together two ancient ancestries related to our families. He is the 10th great grandson of Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson, Earle of the Uplands of Norway (an eighth century Viking) and Henry is the 35th great grandson of Godwulf. Godwulf is the 65th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, though he is not directly related to me, but through their father, Steve O. Westmoreland. Godwulf is the earliest ancestor to whom any of our modern-day relatives can claim relationship.

Godwulf's descendants travel down through the family line of my son-in-law, Steven O.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Westmoreland. Godwulf's birth occurred just months following the event of Mount Vesuvius erupting on August 24, 79 AD, burying the Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mount_Vesuvius

Henry II was the first King of England to come from the Plantagenet family. He reigned from 1154 until his death in 1189. He became known as the founder of the English system of common law, including introducing the use of juries and other legal procedures we consider common today.

Henry II, first of the Angevin kings, was one of the most effective of all England's monarchs. He came to the throne amid the anarchy of Stephen's reign and promptly collared his errant barons. He refined Norman government and created a capable, self-standing bureaucracy. His energy was equaled only by his ambition and intelligence. Henry survived wars, rebellion, and controversy to successfully rule one of the Middle Ages' most powerful kingdoms.

Now for a little discourse on law:

"Common law is a body of rulings made by judges on the basis of community customs and previous court decisions. It forms an essential part of the legal system of many English-speaking countries, including the United States and Canada. Common law covers such matters as contracts, ownership of property, and the payment of claims for personal injury.

"Early in England's history, judges decided cases according to the way they interpreted the beliefs and unwritten laws of the community. If another judge had ruled in an earlier, similar case, that judge's decision was often used as a precedent (guide). After many judges decided the same question in a similar way, the ruling became law.

"Common law is often contrasted with civil law, a body of rules passed by a legislature. Under civil law, a judge decides a case by following written rules, rather than previous court decisions. Common law also differs from equity, a set of standards developed to allow greater flexibility in court decisions. During the late Middle Ages, England created courts of equity to decide cases that courts of common law might treat too strictly. These courts decided cases by broad principles of justice and fairness, rather than by the rigid standards of common law. The monarch's chancellor presided over a court of equity called the court of chancery.

"The legal system of the United States has developed from English common law and equity. Only one U.S. state, Louisiana, modeled its legal system on civil law. Louisiana used the civil law of France, called the Code Napoleon. During the late 1800's, many state scombined their courts of common law and courts of equity. One group of judges administers the combined courts. In Canada, similarly, only the province of Quebec based its legal system on French law. "

Contributor: David M. O'Brien, Ph.D., Professor. of Government, University. of Virginia, World Book Encyclopedia, 1998.

The marriage of Henry II to Eleanor of Aquitaine made him Duke of Aquitaine at the time. He became King when King Stephen died. He not only ruled over most of France, but claimed Ireland, Scotland, and Wales. It was later that his two sons rebelled against him, and each in his own time became King of England.

Henry II came into conflict with Thomas Becket, archbishop of Canterbury, over Henry's attempts to curb the independence of the church. In 1170, four of Henry's knights, believing they were acting on the King's orders, murdered Becket in his cathedral.

From Sir Winston Churchill Kt, 1675: "Henry II Plantagenet, the very first of that name and

Ancestors of "James V" James

race, and the very greatest King that England ever knew, but withal the most unfortunate . . . his death being imputed to those only to whom himself had given life, his ungracioussons. . ."

Source:<http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon26.html>

Though close in time, Henry I, son of William the Conqueror, is not the father of Henry II. Rather Henry I is the grandfather of Henry II.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the WindsorCastle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. However, King Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

Notes for Eleanor of Aquitaine:

Eleanor of Aquitaine, pronounced AK wih tayn (1122-1204), was the wife of King Louis VII of France and later of King Henry II of England. She was also the mother of two English kings, Richard the Lion-Hearted and John. Her control of Aquitaine, then a vast independent state next to France, made her a central figure in the struggle for power between France and England.

Eleanor was the daughter of William X, Duke of Aquitaine. In 1137, when Eleanor was 15 years old, she inherited Aquitaine. Her land came under French control when she married Louis VII later that year. Eleanor and Louis had two daughters. But the lack of a male heir contributed to unhappiness in their marriage, and they agreed to a divorce in 1152.

Within months, Eleanor married Henry Plantagenet, who became King Henry II of England in 1154. Later, Eleanor and Henry lost affection for each other, and she supported a revolt against him in 1173. The revolt failed and Henry imprisoned Eleanor. Eleanor was freed in 1189, after Henry died and Richard became king. Eleanor greatly influenced both Richard and John during their reigns.

Contributor: Marion Meade, M.S., Author, Eleanor of Aquitaine. 1986 CD Version of the World Book Encyclopedia

152 **Aymer "Count of Angouleme" Taillefer**
34.

Generation 15

266 **"William the Conqueror" William** (son of "Duke of Normandy" Robert I and "Arletta"
28. Herleva) was born in 1027 in Falaise, France. He died on Sep 09, 1087 in Rouen, England. He married **"Maud of Flanders" Matilda** between 1051-1053 in France.

266 **"Maud of Flanders" Matilda** was born in 1032. She died on Nov 03, 1083.
29.

Notes for "William the Conqueror" William:

William the Conqueror is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. The ancestor in common with William and me is the ninth century Norwegian Viking, Eystein Glumra Ivarsson. Glumra Ivarsson is William's sixth great grandfather and Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great

Ancestors of "James V" James

grandfather on my Mother's Abney side of the family. William is the 17th great grandfather of affluent Englishman Edward Southworth, first husband of Alice Carpenter, on my Father's side of the family. Alice, through her second marriage, is my seventh great grandmother. William is the 31st great grandfather to my Westmoreland grandchildren: Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam. William is the paternal grandfather of 14th great grand uncle of Edward Southworth, the first husband of my 7th great grandmother Alice Southworth Bradley.

Early in his adult life, he was known as William II, Duke of Normandy. It was later that he became better known as William I, or William the Conqueror, King of England. He subdued rebellious vassals, defeated King Henry I of France at Val des Dunes (Henry is William's first cousin, twice removed). William defeated Harold, Saxon King of England at the Battle of Hastings in 1066. He was crowned King of England on December 22, 1066, according to some reports. Others place the coronation on Christmas day. The coronation was in Westminster Abbey. So, it can be said that this part of our family did not immigrate to England. They conquered it!

"William I, a Frenchman, was the first of many, many English Kings to be crowned in Westminster Abbey. Westminster Abbey marked the scene of many great events in English history. All the English rulers from the time of William the Conqueror, except Edward V and Edward VIII, were crowned there. Technically, William was not the actual first coronation in Westminster. Harold, the counselor to King Edward the Confessor, sought to usurp the crown upon Edward's death, in spite of William's coming to claim it. Harold had a rush job done to crown himself in Westminster Abbey. However, Harold's coronation, in a sense, does not count, as he was not of Royal blood. William was of Royal blood. In fact, William was a first cousin, once removed to King Edward the Confessor.

"What was the background about why William got involved in England?

"King Edward the Confessor (1002?-1066), an Anglo-Saxon king descended from Alfred the Great, was crowned in 1042. As king, Edward lacked influence among England's Anglo-Saxon nobles, because he had lived in the Normandy region of northwestern France before becoming king. Edward's Anglo-Saxon father-in-law, Godwin, Earl of Wessex, tried to dominate Edward's reign. Edward resisted Godwin's efforts by relying on Norman advisers and administrators. Godwin died in 1053.

"King Edward was a pious man. He founded Westminster Abbey in 1042, which was completed in 1065. In 1161, Pope Alexander III canonized Edward (declared him a saint) and gave him the title of Confessor.

"King Richard I is the ancestor common to William I and King Edward. Richard is the great grandfather of William, and the grandfather of Edward

"Edward was childless, and a dispute arose over who should succeed him. His first cousin, once removed, William, Duke of Normandy, claimed Edward had promised him the throne. But when Edward died in 1066, the English nobles chose Harold, Godwin's son, as king. William then invaded England, defeated Harold, and was crowned king. So, William rallied the troops and stormed across the English Channel to make claim on Edward's alleged promise to him.

William invaded England on September 28, 1066 and prepared for victory.

"The Battle of Hastings Plans:

"Harold learned that William had landed at Pevensey in the south of England when he was in the north of the country recovering Stamford Bridge and York. He marched his troops south as fast as possible, stopping in London for reinforcements. He took up position at Caldbec Hill, along the Sentslache Ridge, a few miles north of Hastings. As the ridge had deep ravines, streams and marshy ground on either side, Harold blocked William's only road out of the Hastings peninsula so forcing him into a frontal attack. By positioning his army at

Ancestors of "James V" James

the top of the hill, he had clear visibility all around him and forced William's army into continually running up the hill to attack. Harold built a shield wall that stretched in rows along the ridge and which was made up of his housecarls, thegns (nobles) and fyrdmen. Being skilled fighters, the housecarls and thegns were positioned in between the fyrdmen who were unskilled, poorly armed and inexperienced peasant soldiers. Harold expected the wall to hold firm against assault and for William's men to tire and weaken from having to attack uphill. This would eventually allow Harold's army to launch a counter-attack with relatively fresh troops strong enough to defeat the opponent.

"William was unprepared for Harold's speedy arrival at Caldbec Hill, but quickly gathered his troops and went to meet him at Senlache. His army was divided into three sections, each with a commander. The left section comprised mainly of Bretons, the central section were Norman under William's command, and the right section was made up of the French and Flemish. Each section was divided into three rows - the archers, the infantry and the cavalry. William's plan was to use the archers first to send their arrows into the English ranks, followed by the infantry in hand-to-hand combat and to finally advance with the cavalry who had the height and power of being on horseback. The effect would be a three pronged attack and a gradual build up in power that would demoralize the English.

"THE BATTLE:

"The battle took all day beginning early in the morning of 14th October 1066 with William's archers firing the first arrows into English ranks. William followed up his plan with an attack by the infantry and then by the cavalry, but Harold's army was stronger than expected and William's army sustained many casualties. The Bretons on the left flank panicked due to their lack of experience, the unexpected strength of Harold's army and the noise and confusion. They failed to keep in line and got ahead of the other two sections on their right. In their panic they began to retreat. Harold's less experienced fighters broke rank when they saw the Bretons retreating, and William's army slaughtered them.

"William retreated and regrouped. The second and following assaults went according to William's plan and he supported his troops by joining in the charge on horseback. Both sides became more tired as the day wore on and suffered heavy casualties. As the supply of arrows was running low, William ordered the archers to fire them high into the air for the final assault so that they fell into the rear ranks of the English army. This caused high casualties and the collapse of the English shield wall. The Norman's penetrated the ranks and killed Harold. With the morale of the English troops shattered by the death of their leader, the battle ended in defeat for the English, although the housecarls (the *Pingalio*) and thegns continued to fight to their deaths. However, more recently, historian Nicholas Hooper criticised Larson and stated that "it is time to debunk the housecarl"; according to Hooper, housecarls were not in effect distinguishable from Saxon [thegns](#), and were mainly retainers who received lands or pay (or both), but without being really a standing army. Hooper asserts that while the Housecarles might well have had superior *esprit de corps* and more uniform training and equipment than the average Thegn, they would not necessarily have been a clearly defined military elite. Over the following months, William captured Canterbury, Winchester and London. He was crowned king on Christmas Day 1066.

"WHY DID HAROLD LOSE?

"Harold was badly prepared to face William's troops. William had spent months preparing for invasion in a secure position and environment in Normandy. Harold's tenure as king was weak from the time of his accession and, although aware of the threat from Normandy, he was occupied by other events at home.

"William built up his army and support in feudal tradition promising lands in England to those who joined his army and eternal paradise to anyone who died during the battle. He'd also obtained the approval of the Pope in his plans so gaining greater support and turning the invasion into a crusade. The knights were recruited with their own horses, men and equipment. Over the months, William's army was rigorously disciplined and trained before

Ancestors of "James V" James

being ready to sail for England, but they had to wait until September before having a favorable wind. William's plans suffered a set back when the fleet got caught in a storm and he had to take refuge and regroup in the Somme estuary. However, as a result, the distance he had to cover in his crossing was considerably shorter and the next opportunity he had to sail was at the time when Harold was in the north of England.

"William's decision to land at Pevensey was important. Pevensey was on a lagoon to the west of Hastings and was a scarcely populated area. The lagoon was a shelter from the weather as the ships could be beached high up on the land at high tide. The Hastings peninsula was bordered by Pevensey Lagoon to the west and the River Brede to the east so providing it with natural protection from attack and only one way in and out of the peninsula to the main land in the north.

"William quickly established his presence on the peninsula including building up the Roman Fort at Pevensey and taking Hastings.

"Harold was not so lucky in his plans. Some weeks before the invasion, he had mobilized troops along the coast and sent his navy to the Isle of Wight to intercept William's fleet, but he was unable to keep them there, as they became demoralized waiting for William's army to set sail and concerned about gathering in the harvest in their home towns. Harold disbanded them at the beginning of September and lost many of his ships in the same storm from which William had been forced to take refuge. When he received news that William had landed at Pevensey, Harold was fighting the invasion of Harald Hardrada of Norway in the north.

"Despite his battle plan and his choice of a strategic location, Harold's army was exhausted from having to travel north and fight at Stamford Bridge, and then hastily return south without time to rest. Harold's support from the north was limited, and, although the Earls of Mercia and Northumberland had begun riding south, they turned back when they heard of Harold's death. Except for the housecarls and thegns, Harold's men were not trained and did not have the distant attack advantage of the archers or the power of the cavalry. In accordance with English tradition, those of Harold's army who were on horseback rode to the battle location and then fought on foot while William's cavalry walked to the location and then mounted for battle.

"THE RESULTS

"William was crowned king of England on Christmas Day 1066 (some say December 22 instead). There followed 88 years of Norman rule. The French and English cultures merged and the feudal system was introduced. This led to a tough discipline and training and it took away much of the Anglo-Saxon's freedom and rights. England's strength grew and she became a powerful force in European politics because of her tie with Normandy. Her army and navy were built up as well.

In 1085 William ordered a survey of English assets and this became known as the "Doomsday Book." William's reign was not easy, and there were rebellions which were quickly suppressed, but the Norman Conquest changed the face of England forever."

Source: World Book Encyclopedia, CD version, 1998

AND HERE ARE THE LATEST WORDS!

There is another claim of world significance made for King William I, as learned from the lectures of University of North Carolina English literature professor, Dr. Elliott Engel. Dr. Engel highlighted the historical fact that conquerors of the world traditionally required the conquered peoples to use for language in commerce and in government the language of the conqueror. William the Conqueror chose not to do that. He allowed the conquered English people to continue their language in commerce and in government transactions, while the French of the conquerors became commingled, often using French and English

Ancestors of "James V" James

words in the same sentences so that people from both backgrounds would understand the meanings. These French words, in reality, became embedded into the English language, thus being a major reason that English has evolved into being the language of the world having the largest number of words.

So, it can be said that William the Conqueror is responsible to a large degree for the English language having the largest vocabulary in the world. In Dr. Elliott's 1994 lecture at the Richardson, Texas Civic Center, he said that the Oxford Dictionary then contained about 450,000 words. He said that a complete French dictionary would have about 150,000 words and that a complete Russian dictionary would have about 130,000 words.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the Windsor Castle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

William died September 9, 1087 from wounds received in a battle at Mantes, England. After being wounded he died at Rouen, England.

The New Law of the Land as set down by William the Conqueror and his advisors:

"First that above all things he wishes one God to be revered throughout his whole realm, one faith in Christ to be kept ever inviolate, and peace and security to be preserved between English and Normans.

"We decree also that every freeman shall affirm by oath and compact that he will be loyal to king William both within and without England, that he will preserve with him his lands and honor with all fidelity and defend him against his enemies.

"I will, moreover, that all the men I have brought with me, or who have come after me, shall be protected by my peace and shall dwell in quiet. And if any one of them shall be slain, let the lord of his murderer seize him within five days, if he can; but if he cannot, let him pay me 46 marks of silver so long as his substance avails. And when his substance is exhausted, let the whole hundred in which the murder took place pay what remains in common.

"And let every Frenchman who, in the time of king Edward, my kinsman, was a sharer in the customs of the English, pay what they call "Scotland lot", according to the laws of the English. This decree was ordained in the city of Gloucester.

"We forbid also that any live cattle shall be bought or sold for money except within cities, and this shall be done before three faithful witnesses; nor even anything old without surety and warrant. But if anyone shall do otherwise, let him pay once, and afterwards a second time for a fine.

"It was decreed there that if a Frenchman shall charge an Englishman with perjury or murder or theft or homicide or "ran," as the English call open rapine, which cannot be denied, the Englishman may defend himself, as he shall prefer, either by the ordeal of hot iron or by wager of battle. But if the Englishman be infirm, let him find another who will take his place. If one of them shall be vanquished, he shall pay a fine of 40 shillings to the king. If an Englishman shall charge a Frenchman and be unwilling to prove his accusation, either by ordeal or by wager of battle, I will, nevertheless, that the Frenchman shall acquit himself by a valid oath.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"This also I command and will, that all shall have and hold the law of the king Edward in respect of their lands and all their possessions, with the addition of those decrees I have ordained for the welfare of the English people.

"Every man who wishes to be considered a freeman shall be in pledge so that his surety shall hold him and hand him over to justice, if he shall offend in any way. And if any such shall escape, let his sureties see to it that they pay forthwith what is charge against him, and let them clear themselves of any complicity in his escape. Let recourse be had to the hundred and shire courts as our predecessors decreed. And those who ought of right to come and are unwilling to appear, shall be summoned once; and, if for the second time they refuse to come, one ox shall be taken from them, and they shall be summoned a third time. And if they do not come the third time, a second ox shall be taken from them. But if they do not come the fourth summons, the man who is unwilling to come shall forfeit from his goods the amount of the charge against him, "ceapgeld" as it is called, and in addition to this a fine to the king.

"I prohibit the sale of any man by another outside the country on pain of a fine to be paid in full to me.

"I also forbid that anyone shall be slain or hanged for any fault, but let his eyes be put out and let him be castrated. And this command shall not be violated under pain of a fine in full to me."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/laws.html>

In 1066, Halley's Comet was seen in England May 16 and thought to be abad omen. Later that year Harold II of England died at the Battle of Hastings on October 14. Illustration of Halley's Comet is shown on the Bayeux Tapestry, and the accounts which have been preserved represent it as having then appeared to be four times the size of Venus, and to have shone with a light equal to a quarter of that of the Moon.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comet_Halley

It is a positive note for me to discover that the number one priority in William's list of law principles cited above centers upon the worship of God through Christ. The fierceness of William's conquering activities had led me to believe he was pagan, which was the Norman's Norwegians' roots. However, the Roman Catholic Church, the main Church of Europe in those years, apparently had its influence onWilliam in his French Norman rearing.

"Windsor Castle was originally built by William the Conqueror, who reigned from 1066 until his death in 1087. His original wooden castle stood on the site of the present Round Tower ("A"). The castle formed part of his defensive ring of castles surrounding London, the site chosen in part because of its easily defendable position.

"Early in William's reign he had taken possession of a manor in what today is Old Windsor, probably a Saxon royal residence. A short time later between 1070 and 1086, he leased the site of the present castle from the Manor of Clewer and built the first motte-and-bailey castle.The motte is 50-feet high and consists of chalk excavated from a surrounding ditch, which then became a moat.

"At this time the castle was defended by a wooden palisade rather than the thick stone walls seen today. The original plan of William the Conqueror's castle is unknown, but it was purely a military base and nothing structural survives from this early period. From that time onwards the castle has remained in continuous use and has undergone numerous additions and improvements. His successor William II is thought to have improved and enlarged the structure, but the Conqueror's youngest son King Henry I was the first sovereign to live within the castle.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"Windsor Castle (51°29'02"N, 0°36'16"W) is the largest inhabited castle in the world and the oldest in continuous occupation. Together with Buckingham Palace in London and Holyrood Palace in Edinburgh it is one of the principal official residences of the British monarch. The castle is located in the Berkshire town of Windsor, in the Thames Valley to the west of London.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Windsor_Castle

Yet, both in Normandy and in England, William was faithful to tradition, and in England, especially, it became a cardinal feature of his administration to respect, and to utilize, the customs of the kingdom he had conquered. This is especially documented in David C. Douglas's book, "William the Conqueror," Chapter 12 (pp. 289-316).

Source: David C. Douglas, "William the Conqueror," University of California Press, C 1964 ISBN 0-520-00350-0 (this book is in my personal library)

Another famous landmark of London, nestled on the River Thames, is the Tower of London.

"According to Shakespeare, in his play Richard III, the Tower of London was first built by Julius Caesar. This supposed Roman origin is, however, just a myth. Its true foundation was in 1078 when William the Conqueror ordered the White Tower to be built. This was as much to protect the Normans from the people of the City of London as to protect London from outside invaders. William ordered the Tower to be built of stone which he had specially imported from France. He chose this location because he considered it to be a strategic point being opposite the site where Earl Godwin had landed in Southwark in 1051 during his Saxon rebellion against the Norman influence of Edward the Confessor. It was King Richard the Lion Heart who had the moat dug around the surrounding wall and filled with water from the Thames. The moat was not very successful until Henry III employed a Dutch moat building technique. The moat was drained in 1830, and human bones were in the refuse found at its bottom."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tower_of_London

Notes for "Maud of Flanders" Matilda:

Known as Mathilda of Flanders

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon24.html>

266 **Malcolm III Canmore** was born in 1031. He died on Nov 13, 1093. He married **Margaret**
30. (daughter of "The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward and Agatha) in 1069 in Dunfermline.

266 **Margaret** (daughter of "The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward and Agatha) was born in 1045.
31. She died on Nov 16, 1093.

Notes for Malcolm III Canmore:

King of Scotland, or known as King of Scots. He was slain while besieging Alnwick Castle.

Notes for Margaret:

Margaret was a member of the Saxon royal house of England. Thus her husband, Henry I, gained support of his Saxon subjects and strengthened his descendants' claim to the throne.

299 **"Plantagenet" Geoffrey** was born on Aug 24, 1113 in The Royal Palace in Sutton

Ancestors of "James V" James

52. Courtenay (Berkshire). He died on Sep 07, 1151. He married **Edith Matilda** (daughter of "Beauclerc" Henry and Matilda of Scotland) on Apr 03, 1127.
- 299 **Edith Matilda** (daughter of "Beauclerc" Henry and Matilda of Scotland) was born in 1101.
53. She died on Sep 07, 1167.

Notes for "Plantagenet" Geoffrey:

Geoffrey V was born August 24, 1111. He would later marry Edith Matilda, Empress Matilda, the daughter and heiress of King Henry I of England. Matilda is my ninth cousin, 24 times removed.

On August 24, 79 AD, Mount Vesuvius erupted, burying the Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died. This was 1,034 years to the day of Geoffrey's birthday.

Source:<http://www.harcourtschool.com/activity/pompeii/>

"Geoffrey V., called the Handsome (French: le Bel) and Plantagenet, was the Count of Anjou, Touraine, and Maine by inheritance from 1129 and then Duke of Normandy by conquest from 1144. By his marriage to the Empress Matilda, daughter and heiress of Henry I of England, Geoffrey had a son, Henry Curtmantle, who succeeded to the English throne and founded the Plantagenet dynasty to which Geoffrey gave his nickname.

"Geoffrey was the elder son of Fulk V of Anjou and Eremburga of LaFlèche, heiress of Elias I of Maine. Geoffrey received his nickname for the yellow sprig of broom blossom (genêt is the French name for the genista, or broom shrub) he wore in his hat as a badge. King Henry I of England, having heard good reports on Geoffrey's talents and prowess, sent his royal legates to Anjou to negotiate a marriage between Geoffrey and his own daughter, Matilda. Consent was obtained from both parties, and on June 10, 1128 the fifteen-year-old Geoffrey was knighted in Rouen by King Henry in preparation for the wedding. Interestingly, there was no opposition to the marriage from the Church, despite the fact that Geoffrey's sister was the widow of Matilda's brother (only son of King Henry) which fact had been used to annul the marriage of another of Geoffrey's sisters to the Norman pretender William Clito."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geoffrey_of_Anjou

Notes for Edith Matilda:

Edith Matilda is my ninth cousin, 24 times removed.

Matilda is the Latin form of Maud, and the name of the only surviving legitimate child of King Henry I. She was born in 1101, generally it is said at Winchester, but recent research indicates that she was actually born at the Royal Palace in Sutton Courtenay (Berkshire).

In something of a political coup for her father, Matilda was betrothed to the German Emperor, Henry V, when she was only eight. They were remarried on 7th January 1114. She was twelve and he was thirty-two. Unfortunately there were no children and on the Emperor's death in 1125, Matilda was recalled to her father's court.

Matilda's only legitimate brother had been killed in the disastrous Wreck of the White Ship in late 1120 and she was now her father's only hope for the continuation of his dynasty. The barons swore allegiance to the young Princess and promised to make her queen after her father's death. She herself needed heirs though and in April 1127, Matilda found herself obliged to marry Prince Geoffrey of Anjou and Maine (the future Geoffrey V, Count of those Regions). He was thirteen, she twenty-three. It is thought that the two never got on. However, despite this unhappy situation they had had three sons in four years.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Being absent in Anjou at the time of her father's death on 1st December 1135, possibly due to pregnancy, Matilda was not in much of a position to take up the throne which had been promised her and she quickly lost out to her fast-moving cousin, Stephen. With her husband, she attempted to take Normandy. With encouragement from supporters in England though, it was not long before Matilda invaded her rightful English domain and so began a long-standing Civil War from the powerbase of her half-brother, Robert of Gloucester, in the West Country.

After three years of armed struggle, she at last gained the upper hand at the Battle of Lincoln, in February 1141, where King Stephen was captured. However, despite being declared Queen or "Lady of the English" at Winchester and winning over Stephen's brother, Henry of Blois, the powerful Bishop of Winchester, Matilda alienated the citizens of London with her arrogant manner. She failed to secure her coronation and the Londoners joined a renewed push from Stephen's Queen and laid siege to the Empress in Winchester. She managed to escape to the West, but while commanding her rearguard, her brother was captured by the enemy.

Matilda was obliged to swap Stephen for Robert on 1st November 1141. Thus the King soon reimposed his Royal authority. In 1148, after the death of her half-brother, Matilda finally returned to Normandy, leaving her son, who, in 1154, would become Henry II, to fight on in England. She died at Rouen on 10th September 1169 and was buried in Fontevrault Abbey, though some of her entrails may possibly have been later interred in her father's foundation at Reading Abbey.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon25a.html>

299 "Duke of Aquitaine" William
54.

304 "Plantagenet" Geoffrey was born on Aug 24, 1113 in The Royal Palace in Sutton
64. Courtenay (Berkshire). He died on Sep 07, 1151. He married **Edith Matilda** (daughter of "Beauclerc" Henry and Matilda of Scotland) on Apr 03, 1127.

304 **Edith Matilda** (daughter of "Beauclerc" Henry and Matilda of Scotland) was born in 1101.
65. She died on Sep 07, 1167.

Notes for "Plantagenet" Geoffrey:

Geoffrey V was born August 24, 1111. He would later marry Edith Matilda, Empress Matilda, the daughter and heiress of King Henry I of England. Matilda is my ninth cousin, 24 times removed.

On August 24, 79 AD, Mount Vesuvius erupted, burying the Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died. This was 1,034 years to the day of Geoffrey's birthday.

Source: <http://www.harcourtschool.com/activity/pompeii/>

"Geoffrey V., called the Handsome (French: le Bel) and Plantagenet, was the Count of Anjou, Touraine, and Maine by inheritance from 1129 and then Duke of Normandy by conquest from 1144. By his marriage to the Empress Matilda, daughter and heiress of Henry I of England, Geoffrey had a son, Henry Curtmantle, who succeeded to the English throne and founded the Plantagenet dynasty to which Geoffrey gave his nickname.

"Geoffrey was the elder son of Fulk V of Anjou and Eremburga of La Flèche, heiress of Elias I of Maine. Geoffrey received his nickname for the yellow sprig of broom blossom (genêt is the French name for the genista, or broom shrub) he wore in his hat as a badge. King

Ancestors of "James V" James

Henry I of England, having heard good reports on Geoffrey's talents and prowess, sent his royal legates to Anjou to negotiate a marriage between Geoffrey and his own daughter, Matilda. Consent was obtained from both parties, and on June 10, 1128 the fifteen-year-old Geoffrey was knighted in Rouen by King Henry in preparation for the wedding. Interestingly, there was no opposition to the marriage from the Church, despite the fact that Geoffrey's sister was the widow of Matilda's brother (only son of King Henry) which fact had been used to annul the marriage of another of Geoffrey's sisters to the Norman pretender William Clito."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geoffrey_of_Anjou

Notes for Edith Matilda:

Edith Matilda is my ninth cousin, 24 times removed.

Matilda is the Latin form of Maud, and the name of the only surviving legitimate child of King Henry I. She was born in 1101, generally it is said at Winchester, but recent research indicates that she was actually born at the Royal Palace in Sutton Courtenay (Berkshire).

In something of a political coup for her father, Matilda was betrothed to the German Emperor, Henry V, when she was only eight. They were married on 7th January 1114. She was twelve and he was thirty-two. Unfortunately there were no children and on the Emperor's death in 1125, Matilda was recalled to her father's court.

Matilda's only legitimate brother had been killed in the disastrous Wreck of the White Ship in late 1120 and she was now her father's only hope for the continuation of his dynasty. The barons swore allegiance to the young Princess and promised to make her queen after her father's death. She herself needed heirs though and in April 1127, Matilda found herself obliged to marry Prince Geoffrey of Anjou and Maine (the future Geoffrey V, Count of those Regions). He was thirteen, she twenty-three. It is thought that the two never got on. However, despite this unhappy situation they had had three sons in four years.

Being absent in Anjou at the time of her father's death on 1st December 1135, possibly due to pregnancy, Matilda was not in much of a position to take up the throne which had been promised her and she quickly lost out to her fast-moving cousin, Stephen. With her husband, she attempted to take Normandy. With encouragement from supporters in England though, it was not long before Matilda invaded her rightful English domain and so began a long-standing Civil War from the powerbase of her half-brother, Robert of Gloucester, in the West Country.

After three years of armed struggle, she at last gained the upper hand at the Battle of Lincoln, in February 1141, where King Stephen was captured. However, despite being declared Queen or "Lady of the English" at Winchester and winning over Stephen's brother, Henry of Blois, the powerful Bishop of Winchester, Matilda alienated the citizens of London with her arrogant manner. She failed to secure her coronation and the Londoners joined a renewed push from Stephen's Queen and laid siege to the Empress in Winchester. She managed to escape to the West, but while commanding her rearguard, her brother was captured by the enemy.

Matilda was obliged to swap Stephen for Robert on 1st November 1141. Thus the King soon reimposed his Royal authority. In 1148, after the death of her half-brother, Matilda finally returned to Normandy, leaving her son, who, in 1154, would become Henry II, to fight on in England. She died at Rouen on 10th September 1169 and was buried in Fontevrault Abbey, though some of her entrails may possibly have been later interred in her father's foundation at Reading Abbey.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon25a.html>

Ancestors of "James V" James

304 "Duke of Aquitaine" William
66.

Generation 16

532 "Duke of Normandy" Robert I (son of "le Bon (the Good)" Richard and Judith) was born on
56. Jun 22, 1000 AD. He died in Jul 1035. He married "Arletta" Herleva.

532 "Arletta" Herleva (daughter of "Falais - The Tanner" Fulbert) was born in Falasia, France.
57.

Notes for "Duke of Normandy" Robert I:

Robert was known as "the Magnificent" and "the Devil." He succeeded his brother, Richard III, as Duke of Normandy. He died while returning on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land.

Robert the Magnificent (French: *le Magnifique*) (22 June 1000 – 1–3 July 1035), was the [Duke of Normandy](#) from 1027 until his death in 1035. Owing to uncertainty over the numbering of the Dukes of Normandy he is usually called Robert I, but sometimes Robert II with his ancestor [Rollo](#) as Robert I. He was the son of [Richard II](#) and brother of [Richard III](#), who preceded him as the Duke. After less than a year after his father's death, Robert revolted against his brother's rule and deposed him. He was succeeded by his illegitimate son, [William the Conqueror](#) who became the first Norman king of England in 1066, following the [Norman conquest of England](#).

Robert was the son of [Richard II of Normandy](#) and [Judith](#), daughter of [Conan I, Duke of Brittany](#). He was also grandson of [Richard I of Normandy](#), great-grandson of [William I of Normandy](#) and great-great grandson of [Rollo](#), the Viking who founded Normandy. Before he died, Richard II had decided his elder son [Richard III](#) would succeed him while his second son Robert would become Count of [Hiémois](#). In August 1026 their father, Richard II, died and Richard III became duke, but very soon afterwards Robert rebelled against his brother, was subsequently defeated and forced to swear fealty to his older brother Richard.

When Richard III died a year later, there were suspicions that Robert had something to do with his death. Although nothing could be proved, Robert had the most to gain. The civil war Robert I had brought against his brother Richard III was still causing instability in the duchy. Private wars raged between neighboring barons. This resulted in a new aristocracy arising in [Normandy](#) during Robert's reign. It was also during this time that many of the lesser nobility left Normandy to seek their fortunes in southern Italy and elsewhere. Soon after assuming the dukedom, possibly in revenge for supporting his brother against him, Robert I assembled an army against his uncle, [Robert](#), Archbishop of Rouen and Count of [Évreux](#). A temporary truce allowed his uncle to leave Normandy in exile but this resulted in an edict excommunicating all of Normandy, which was only lifted when Archbishop Robert was allowed to return and his countship was restored. Robert also attacked another powerful churchman, his cousin Hugo III d'Ivry, Bishop of Bayeux, banishing him from Normandy for an extended period of time. Robert also seized a number of church properties belonging to the Abbey of Fecamp.

Despite his domestic troubles, Robert decided to intervene in the civil war in [Flanders](#) between [Baldwin V, Count of Flanders](#) and his father [Baldwin IV](#) whom the younger Baldwin had driven out of Flanders. Baldwin V, supported by king [Robert II of France](#), his father-in-law, was persuaded to make peace with his father in 1030 when Duke Robert promised the elder Baldwin his considerable military support.

Robert gave shelter to [Henry I of France](#) against his mother, [Queen Constance](#), who favored her younger son [Robert](#) to succeed to the French throne after his father Robert II. For his help Henry I rewarded Robert with the French Vexin. In the early 1030s [Alan III, Duke of Brittany](#) began expanding his influence from the area of [Rennes](#) and appeared to have designs on the area surrounding [Mont Saint-Michel](#). After sacking Dol and repelling

Ancestors of "James V" James

Alan's attempts to raid Avranches, Robert mounted a major campaign against his cousin Alan III. However, Alan appealed to their uncle, Archbishop Robert of Rouen, who then brokered a peace between Duke Robert and his vassal Alan III. His cousins, the Athelings [Edward](#) and [Alfred](#), sons of his aunt [Emma of Normandy](#) and [Athelred, King of England](#) had been living at the Norman Court and at one point Robert, on their behalf, attempted to mount an invasion of England but was prevented in doing so, it was said, by unfavorable winds, that scattered and sank much of the fleet. Robert made a safe landing in Guernsey. *Gesta Normannorum Ducum* stated that [King Cnut](#) sent envoys to Duke Robert offering to settle half the Kingdom of England on Edward and Alfred. After postponing the naval invasion he chose to also postpone the decision until after he returned from Jerusalem.

By his mistress, [Herleva](#) of Falaise, he was father of:

- [William the Conqueror](#) (c. 1028–1087).

By Herleva or possibly another concubine, he was the father of:

- [Adelaide of Normandy](#), who married firstly, [Enguerrand II, Count of Ponthieu](#). She married secondly, [Lambert II, Count of Lens](#), and thirdly, [Odo II of Champagne](#).

SOURCE: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_I,_Duke_of_Normandy

Notes for "Arletta" Herleva:

She was of Danish origin.

532 "The Exile or The Outlaw" **Edward** (son of "Ironside" Edmund II and Ealgyth) was born in
62. 1016. He died in 1057. He married **Agatha**.

532 **Agatha**
63.

599 "Beauclerc" **Henry** (son of "William the Conqueror" William and "Maud of Flanders" Matilda)
06. was born in 1068. He died on Dec 01, 1135. He married **Matilda of Scotland** (daughter of
Malcolm III Canmore and Margaret) on Nov 11, 1100.

599 **Matilda of Scotland** (daughter of Malcolm III Canmore and Margaret) was born in 1079.
07. She died on May 01, 1118.

Notes for "Beauclerc" Henry:

Henry I (1068-1135), a king of England, is the youngest son of William the Conqueror. King Henry is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. He succeeded his brother King William II in 1100. Henry married Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III of Scotland and his wife, Margaret, a member of the Saxon royal house of England. This was Henry's fourth marriage. Thus, Henry gained the support of his Saxon subjects and strengthened his descendants' claim to the throne.

"Henry promoted centralized rule and gave the royal courts greater authority. He seized Normandy from his eldest brother, Robert, in 1106 and later prevented Robert's son, William, from taking control of what had been his father's lands. After his own son's tragic death by shipwreck, Henry arranged for his daughter, Matilda, to succeed him. But when Henry died, his nephew Stephen became King.

"Henry I, the most resilient of the Norman kings (his reign lasted thirty-five years), was nicknamed "Beauclerc" (fine scholar) for his above average education. During his reign, the differences between English and Norman society began slowly to evaporate. Reforms in the royal treasury system became the foundation upon which later kings built. The stability Henry afforded the throne was offset by problems in succession: his only surviving son, William, was lost in the wreck of the White Ship in November 1120.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"The first years of Henry's reign were concerned with subduing Normandy. William the Conqueror divided his kingdoms between Henry's older brothers, leaving England to William Rufus and Normandy to Robert. Henry inherited no land, but received £5000 in silver. He played each brother off of the other during their quarrels; both distrusted Henry and subsequently signed a mutual accession treaty barring Henry from the crown. Henry's hope arose when Robert departed for the Holy Land on the First Crusade; should William die, Henry was the obvious heir. Henry was in the woods hunting on the morning of August 2, 1100 when William Rufus was killed by an arrow. His quick movement in securing the crown on August 5 led many to believe he was responsible for his brother's death. In his coronation charter, Henry denounced William's oppressive policies and promising good government in an effort to appease his barons. Robert returned to Normandy a few weeks later, but escaped final defeat until the Battle of Tinchebrai in 1106; Robert was captured and lived the remaining twenty-eight years of his life as Henry's prisoner.

"Henry was drawn into controversy with a rapidly expanding Church. Lay investiture, the king's selling of clergy appointments, was heavily opposed by Gregorian reformers in the Church, but was a cornerstone of Norman government. Henry recalled Anselm of Bec to the archbishopric of Canterbury to gain Baronial support, but the stubborn Anselm refused to do homage to Henry for his lands. The situation remained unresolved until Pope Paschal II threatened Henry with excommunication in 1105. He reached a compromise with the papacy: Henry rescinded the king's divine authority in conferring sacred offices, but appointees continued to do homage for their fiefs. In practice, it changed little. The king maintained the deciding voice in appointing ecclesiastical offices, but it marked a point where kingship became purely secular and subservient in the eyes of the Church.

"By 1106, both the quarrels with the church and the conquest of Normandy were settled and Henry concentrated on expanding royal power. He mixed generosity with violence in motivating allegiance to the crown and appointing loyal and gifted men to administrative positions. By raising men out of obscurity for such appointments, Henry began to rely less on landed Barons as ministers and created a loyal bureaucracy.

"He was deeply involved in continental affairs, and therefore spent almost half of his time in Normandy, prompting him to create the position of justiciar - the most trusted of all the king's officials. The justiciar literally ruled in the king's stead.

"Roger of Salisbury, the first justiciar, was instrumental in organizing an efficient department for collection of royal revenues, the Exchequer. The Exchequer held sessions twice a year for sheriffs and other revenue-collecting officials; these officials appeared before the justiciar, the chancellor, and several clerks to render an account of their finances. The Exchequer was an ingenious device for balancing amounts owed versus amounts paid. Henry gained notoriety for sending out court officials to judge local financial disputes (weakening the feudal courts controlled by local lords) and curbing errant sheriffs (weakening the power bestowed upon the sheriffs by his father).

"The final years of Henry's reign were consumed in war with France and difficulties ensuring the succession. The French King Louis VI began consolidating his kingdom and attacked Normandy unsuccessfully on three separate occasions. The succession became a concern upon the 1120 death of his son, William: Henry's marriage to Adelaide was fruitless, leaving his daughter Matilda as the only surviving legitimate heir. She was recalled to Henry's court in 1125 after the death of her husband, Emperor Henry V of Germany. Henry forced his Barons to swear an oath of allegiance to Matilda in 1127, after he arranged her marriage to the sixteen-year-old Geoffrey of Anjou to cement an Angevin alliance on the continent. The marriage, unpopular with the Norman Barons, produced a male heir in 1133, which prompted yet another reluctant oath of loyalty from the aggravated Barons.

"In the summer of 1135, Geoffrey demanded custody of certain key Norman castles as a show of good will from Henry; Henry refused and the pair entered into war. Henry's life ended in this sorry state of affairs -war with his son-in-law and rebellion on the horizon - in

Ancestors of "James V" James

December 1135."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon24.html>

Notes for Matilda of Scotland:

"Matilda of Scotland was the daughter of Malcolm II of Scotland and his Anglo-Saxon queen Margaret. Her marriage to Henry I of England in 1100 thus brought to Henry, descendant of the conquering Normans, a direct and politically desirable link to Matilda's ancestor Alfred the Great. Her life makes clear that Matilda had outstanding talents. She was educated in the exclusive convents of Romsey and Wilton, a grounding which enabled her to further the literate court culture of the twelfth century, and under her control was a substantial demesne that allowed her to exercise both lay and ecclesiastical patronage. In the matter of ruling, she was an active partner in administering Henry's cross-channel realm, served as a member of his curia regis, and on occasion acted with what amounted to vice-regal authority in England while Henry was in Normandy. Chroniclers of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries often refer to her as Mathilda bona regina, or Matildis beatae memoriae, and for a time she was popularly regarded as a saint. She herself was skilled at manipulating those structures

Source: <http://www.boydell.co.uk/5115994X.HTM>

609 **"Beauclerc" Henry** (son of "William the Conqueror" William and "Maud of Flanders" Matilda)
30. was born in 1068. He died on Dec 01, 1135. He married **Matilda of Scotland** (daughter of Malcolm III Canmore and Margaret) on Nov 11, 1100.

609 **Matilda of Scotland** (daughter of Malcolm III Canmore and Margaret) was born in 1079.
31. She died on May 01, 1118.

Notes for "Beauclerc" Henry:

Henry I (1068-1135), a king of England, is the youngest son of William the Conqueror. King Henry is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. He succeeded his brother King William II in 1100. Henry married Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III of Scotland and his wife, Margaret, a member of the Saxon royal house of England. This was Henry's fourth marriage. Thus, Henry gained the support of his Saxon subjects and strengthened his descendants' claim to the throne.

"Henry promoted centralized rule and gave the royal courts greater authority. He seized Normandy from his eldest brother, Robert, in 1106 and later prevented Robert's son, William, from taking control of what had been his father's lands. After his own son's tragic death by shipwreck, Henry arranged for his daughter, Matilda, to succeed him. But when Henry died, his nephew Stephen became King.

"Henry I, the most resilient of the Norman kings (his reign lasted thirty-five years), was nicknamed "Beauclerc" (fine scholar) for his above average education. During his reign, the differences between English and Norman society began slowly to evaporate. Reforms in the royal treasury system became the foundation upon which later kings built. The stability Henry afforded the throne was offset by problems in succession: his only surviving son, William, was lost in the wreck of the White Ship in November 1120.

"The first years of Henry's reign were concerned with subduing Normandy. William the Conqueror divided his kingdoms between Henry's older brothers, leaving England to William Rufus and Normandy to Robert. Henry inherited no land, but received £5000 in silver. He played each brother off of the other during their quarrels; both distrusted Henry and subsequently signed a mutual accession treaty barring Henry from the crown. Henry's hope arose when Robert departed for the Holy Land on the First Crusade; should William die, Henry was the obvious heir. Henry was in the woods hunting on the morning of August 2, 1100 when William Rufus was killed by an arrow. His quick movement in securing the crown

Ancestors of "James V" James

on August 5 led many to believe he was responsible for his brother's death. In his coronation charter, Henry denounced William's oppressive policies and promising good government in an effort to appease his barons. Robert returned to Normandy a few weeks later, but escaped final defeat until the Battle of Tinchebrai in 1106; Robert was captured and lived the remaining twenty-eight years of his life as Henry's prisoner.

"Henry was drawn into controversy with a rapidly expanding Church. Lay investiture, the king's selling of clergy appointments, was heavily opposed by Gregorian reformers in the Church, but was a cornerstone of Norman government. Henry recalled Anselm of Bec to the archbishopric of Canterbury to gain Baronial support, but the stubborn Anselm refused to do homage to Henry for his lands. The situation remained unresolved until Pope Paschal II threatened Henry with excommunication in 1105. He reached a compromise with the papacy: Henry rescinded the king's divine authority in conferring sacred offices, but appointees continued to do homage for their fiefs. In practice, it changed little. The king maintained the deciding voice in appointing ecclesiastical offices, but it marked a point where kingship became purely secular and subservient in the eyes of the Church.

"By 1106, both the quarrels with the church and the conquest of Normandy were settled and Henry concentrated on expanding royal power. He mixed generosity with violence in motivating allegiance to the crown and appointing loyal and gifted men to administrative positions. By raising men out of obscurity for such appointments, Henry began to rely less on landed Barons as ministers and created a loyal bureaucracy.

"He was deeply involved in continental affairs, and therefore spent almost half of his time in Normandy, prompting him to create the position of justiciar - the most trusted of all the king's officials. The justiciar literally ruled in the king's stead.

"Roger of Salisbury, the first justiciar, was instrumental in organizing an efficient department for collection of royal revenues, the Exchequer. The Exchequer held sessions twice a year for sheriffs and other revenue-collecting officials; these officials appeared before the justiciar, the chancellor, and several clerks to render an account of their finances. The Exchequer was an ingenious device for balancing amounts owed versus amounts paid. Henry gained notoriety for sending out court officials to judge local financial disputes (weakening the feudal courts controlled by local lords) and curbing errant sheriffs (weakening the power bestowed upon the sheriffs by his father).

"The final years of Henry's reign were consumed in war with France and difficulties ensuring the succession. The French King Louis VI began consolidating his kingdom and attacked Normandy unsuccessfully on three separate occasions. The succession became a concern upon the 1120 death of his son, William: Henry's marriage to Adelaide was fruitless, leaving his daughter Matilda as the only surviving legitimate heir. She was recalled to Henry's court in 1125 after the death of her husband, Emperor Henry V of Germany. Henry forced his Barons to swear an oath of allegiance to Matilda in 1127, after he arranged her marriage to the sixteen-year-old Geoffrey of Anjou to cement an Angevin alliance on the continent. The marriage, unpopular with the Norman Barons, produced a male heir in 1133, which prompted yet another reluctant oath of loyalty from the aggravated Barons.

"In the summer of 1135, Geoffrey demanded custody of certain key Norman castles as a show of good will from Henry; Henry refused and the pair entered into war. Henry's life ended in this sorry state of affairs -war with his son-in-law and rebellion on the horizon - in December 1135."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon24.html>

Notes for Matilda of Scotland:

"Matilda of Scotland was the daughter of Malcolm II of Scotland and his Anglo-Saxon queen Margaret. Her marriage to Henry I of England in 1100 thus brought to Henry, descendant of the conquering Normans, a direct and politically desirable link to Matilda's ancestor Alfred

Ancestors of "James V" James

theGreat. Her life makes clear that Matilda had outstanding talents. She was educated in the exclusive convents of Romsey and Wilton, a grounding which enabled her to further the literate court culture of the twelfth century, and under her control was a substantial demesne that allowed her to exercise both lay and ecclesiastical patronage. In the matter of ruling, she was an active partner in administering Henry's cross-channel realm, served as a member of his curia regis, and on occasion acted with what amounted to vice-regal authority in England while Henry was in Normandy. Chroniclers of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries often refer to her as Mathilda bona regina, or Matildis beatae memoriae, and for a time she was popularly regarded as a saint. She herself was skilled at manipulating those structures

Source: <http://www.boydell.co.uk/5115994X.HTM>

Generation 17

106 **"le Bon (the Good)" Richard** He died on Aug 28, 1026. He married **Judith** (daughter of
512. "Duke of Brittany" Conan and "Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde) about 1000 AD.

106 **Judith** (daughter of "Duke of Brittany" Conan and "Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde) was
513. born about 982 AD. She died in 1017.

Notes for "le Bon (the Good)" Richard:

Duke of Normandy.

Richard had many children by his first wife, Judith, and his third wife, Poppa. However, the only issue for whom we have a name is Judith's son, Robert I.

Notes for Judith:

Judith of Brittany.

106 **"Falais - The Tanner" Fulbert**
514.

106 **"Ironsides" Edmund II** (son of "The Unready" Aethelred and Alfflaed "Alfflaed" Gunnarson)
524. was born in 989 AD. He died on Nov 30, 1016. He married **Ealgyth**.

106 **Ealgyth**
525.

Notes for "Ironsides" Edmund II:

Edmund Ironside was born about 990 AD, and lived only till November 30, 1016. Edmund was King of England for only a few months. After the death of his father, Aethelred II, in April 1016, Edmund led the defense of the city of London against the invading Knut Sveinsson (Canute), and was proclaimed king by the Londoners. Meanwhile, the Witan (Council), meeting at Southampton, chose Canute as King. After a series of inconclusive military engagements, in which Edmund performed brilliantly and earned the nickname "Ironsides," he defeated the Danish forces at Oxford, Kent, but was routed by Canute's forces at Ashingdon, Essex. A subsequent peace agreement was made, with Edmund controlling Wessex and Canute controlling Mercia and Northumbria. It was also agreed that whoever survived the other would take control of the whole realm. Unfortunately for Edmund, he died in November, 1016, transferring the Kingship of All England completely to Canute.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon15.html>

His faith was in the British Church, which was not very old at that point. The earliest Christian noted in our family was a pagan Scottish King, King Ceawlin. He was baptized by

Ancestors of "James V" James

a Roman Catholic Evangelist A Priest by the name of Father Columba, who'd been sent to the British Isles by Pope Gregory, to bring Christianity there. Ceawlin was baptized in 591 AD.

Though contemporary accounts of Edmund's death do not record that his death was a homicide, later speculation is that Edric, the son of the ealdorman Edrick, did slay the King privately, hoping King Canute would reward him. The King did reward Ecrick by ordering him to be decapitated, and his head placed upon the highest battlement of the Tower of London.

Source: "The Oxford Book of Royal Anticdotes," The Oxford University Press, 1991, page 34.

119 **"William the Conqueror" William** (son of "Duke of Normandy" Robert I and "Arletta"
812. Herleva) was born in 1027 in Falaise, France. He died on Sep 09, 1087 in Rouen, England. He married **"Maud of Flanders" Matilda** between 1051-1053 in France.

119 **"Maud of Flanders" Matilda** was born in 1032. She died on Nov 03, 1083.
813.

Notes for "William the Conqueror" William:

William the Conqueror is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. The ancestor in common with William and me is the ninth century Norwegian Viking, Eystein Glumra Ivarsson. Glumra Ivarsson is William's sixth great grandfather and Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great grandfather on my Mother's Abney side of the family. William is the 17th great grandfather of affluent Englishman Edward Southworth, first husband of Alice Carpenter, on my Father's side of the family. Alice, through her second marriage, is my seventh great grandmother. William is the 31st great grandfather to my Westmoreland grandchildren: Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam. William is the paternal grandfather of 14th great grand uncle of Edward Southworth, the first husband of my 7th great grandmother Alice Southworth Bradley.

Early in his adult life, he was known as William II, Duke of Normandy. It was later that he became better known as William I, or William the Conqueror, King of England. He subdued rebellious vassals, defeated King Henry I of France at Val des Dunes (Henry is William's first cousin, twice removed). William defeated Harold, Saxon King of England at the Battle of Hastings in 1066. He was crowned King of England on December 22, 1066, according to some reports. Others place the coronation on Christmas day. The coronation was in Westminster Abbey. So, it can be said that this part of our family did not immigrate to England. They conquered it!

"William I, a Frenchman, was the first of many, many English Kings to be crowned in Westminster Abbey. Westminster Abbey marked the scene of many great events in English history. All the English rulers from the time of William the Conqueror, except Edward V and Edward VIII, were crowned there. Technically, William was not the actual first coronation in Westminster. Harold, the counselor to King Edward the Confessor, sought to usurp the crown upon Edward's death, in spite of William's coming to claim it. Harold had a rush job done to crown himself in Westminster Abbey. However, Harold's coronation, in a sense, does not count, as he was not of Royal blood. William was of Royal blood. In fact, William was a first cousin, once removed to King Edward the Confessor.

"What was the background about why William got involved in England?

"King Edward the Confessor (1002?-1066), an Anglo-Saxon king descended from Alfred the Great, was crowned in 1042. As king, Edward lacked influence among England's Anglo-Saxon nobles, because he had lived in the Normandy region of northwestern France before becoming king. Edward's Anglo-Saxon father-in-law, Godwin, Earl of Wessex, tried to dominate Edward's reign. Edward resisted Godwin's efforts by relying on Norman advisers and administrators. Godwin died in 1053.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"King Edward was a pious man. He founded Westminster Abbey in 1042, which was completed in 1065. In 1161, Pope Alexander III canonized Edward (declared him a saint) and gave him the title of Confessor.

"King Richard I is the ancestor common to William I and King Edward. Richard is the great grandfather of William, and the grandfather of Edward

"Edward was childless, and a dispute arose over who should succeed him. His first cousin, once removed, William, Duke of Normandy, claimed Edward had promised him the throne. But when Edward died in 1066, the English nobles chose Harold, Godwin's son, as king. William then invaded England, defeated Harold, and was crowned king. So, William rallied the troops and stormed across the English Channel to make claim on Edward's alleged promise to him.

William invaded England on September 28, 1066 and prepared for victory.

"The Battle of Hastings Plans:

"Harold learned that William had landed at Pevensey in the south of England when he was in the north of the country recovering Stamford Bridge and York. He marched his troops south as fast as possible, stopping in London for reinforcements. He took up position at Caldbec Hill, along the Senglache Ridge, a few miles north of Hastings. As the ridge had deep ravines, streams and marshy ground on either side, Harold blocked William's only road out of the Hastings peninsula so forcing him into a frontal attack. By positioning his army at the top of the hill, he had clear visibility all around him and forced William's army into continually running up the hill to attack. Harold built a shield wall that stretched in rows along the ridge and which was made up of his housecarls, thegns (nobles) and fyrdmen. Being skilled fighters, the housecarls and thegns were positioned in between the fyrdmen who were unskilled, poorly armed and inexperienced peasant soldiers. Harold expected the wall to hold firm against assault and for William's men to tire and weaken from having to attack uphill. This would eventually allow Harold's army to launch a counter-attack with relatively fresh troops strong enough to defeat the opponent.

"William was unprepared for Harold's speedy arrival at Caldbec Hill, but quickly gathered his troops and went to meet him at Senglache. His army was divided into three sections, each with a commander. The left section comprised mainly of Bretons, the central section were Norman under William's command, and the right section was made up of the French and Flemish. Each section was divided into three rows - the archers, the infantry and the cavalry. William's plan was to use the archers first to send their arrows into the English ranks, followed by the infantry in hand-to-hand combat and to finally advance with the cavalry who had the height and power of being on horseback. The effect would be a three pronged attack and a gradual build up in power that would demoralize the English.

"THE BATTLE:

"The battle took all day beginning early in the morning of 14th October 1066 with William's archers firing the first arrows into English ranks. William followed up his plan with an attack by the infantry and then by the cavalry, but Harold's army was stronger than expected and William's army sustained many casualties. The Bretons on the left flank panicked due to their lack of experience, the unexpected strength of Harold's army and the noise and confusion. They failed to keep in line and got ahead of the other two sections on their right. In their panic they began to retreat. Harold's less experienced fighters broke rank when they saw the Bretons retreating, and William's army slaughtered them.

"William retreated and regrouped. The second and following assaults went according to William's plan and he supported his troops by joining in the charge on horseback. Both sides became more tired as the day wore on and suffered heavy casualties. As the supply of arrows was running low, William ordered the archers to fire them high into the air for the

Ancestors of "James V" James

final assault so that they fell into the rear ranks of the English army. This caused high casualties and the collapse of the English shield wall. The Norman's penetrated the ranks and killed Harold. With the morale of the English troops shattered by the death of their leader, the battle ended in defeat for the English, although the housecarls (the *Pingalio*) and thegns continued to fight to their deaths. However, more recently, historian Nicholas Hooper criticised Larson and stated that "it is time to debunk the housecarl"; according to Hooper, housecarls were not in effect distinguishable from Saxon [thegns](#), and were mainly retainers who received lands or pay (or both), but without being really a standing army. Hooper asserts that while the Housecarles might well have had superior *esprit de corps* and more uniform training and equipment than the average Thegn, they would not necessarily have been a clearly defined military elite. Over the following months, William captured Canterbury, Winchester and London. He was crowned king on Christmas Day 1066.

"WHY DID HAROLD LOSE?"

"Harold was badly prepared to face William's troops. William had spent months preparing for invasion in a secure position and environment in Normandy. Harold's tenure as king was weak from the time of his accession and, although aware of the threat from Normandy, he was occupied by other events at home.

"William built up his army and support in feudal tradition promising lands in England to those who joined his army and eternal paradise to anyone who died during the battle. He'd also obtained the approval of the Pope in his plans so gaining greater support and turning the invasion into a crusade. The knights were recruited with their own horses, men and equipment. Over the months, William's army was rigorously disciplined and trained before being ready to sail for England, but they had to wait until September before having a favorable wind. William's plans suffered a set back when the fleet got caught in a storm and he had to take refuge and regroup in the Somme estuary. However, as a result, the distance he had to cover in his crossing was considerably shorter and the next opportunity he had to sail was at the time when Harold was in the north of England.

"William's decision to land at Pevensey was important. Pevensey was on a lagoon to the west of Hastings and was a scarcely populated area. The lagoon was a shelter from the weather as the ships could be beached high up on the land at high tide. The Hastings peninsula was bordered by Pevensey Lagoon to the west and the River Brede to the east so providing it with natural protection from attack and only one way in and out of the peninsula to the main land in the north.

"William quickly established his presence on the peninsula including building up the Roman Fort at Pevensey and taking Hastings.

"Harold was not so lucky in his plans. Some weeks before the invasion, he had mobilized troops along the coast and sent his navy to the Isle of Wight to intercept William's fleet, but he was unable to keep them there, as they became demoralized waiting for William's army to set sail and concerned about gathering in the harvest in their home towns. Harold disbanded them at the beginning of September and lost many of his ships in the same storm from which William had been forced to take refuge. When he received news that William had landed at Pevensey, Harold was fighting the invasion of Harald Hardrada of Norway in the north.

"Despite his battle plan and his choice of a strategic location, Harold's army was exhausted from having to travel north and fight at Stamford Bridge, and then hastily return south without time to rest. Harold's support from the north was limited, and, although the Earls of Mercia and Northumberland had begun riding south, they turned back when they heard of Harold's death. Except for the housecarls and thegns, Harold's men were not trained and did not have the distant attack advantage of the archers or the power of the cavalry. In accordance with English tradition, those of Harold's army who were on horseback rode to the battle location and then fought on foot while William's cavalry walked to the location and then mounted for battle.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"THE RESULTS

"William was crowned king of England on Christmas Day 1066 (some say December 22 instead). There followed 88 years of Norman rule. The French and English cultures merged and the feudal system was introduced. This led to a tough discipline and training and it took away much of the Anglo-Saxon's freedom and rights. England's strength grew and she became a powerful force in European politics because of her tie with Normandy. Her army and navy were built up as well.

In 1085 William ordered a survey of English assets and this became known as the "Doomsday Book." William's reign was not easy, and there were rebellions which were quickly suppressed, but the Norman Conquest changed the face of England forever."

Source: World Book Encyclopedia, CD version, 1998

AND HERE ARE THE LATEST WORDS!

There is another claim of world significance made for King William I, as learned from the lectures of University of North Carolina English literature professor, Dr. Elliott Engel. Dr. Engel highlighted the historical fact that conquerors of the world traditionally required the conquered peoples to use for language in commerce and in government the language of the conqueror. William the Conqueror chose not to do that. He allowed the conquered English people to continue their language in commerce and in government transactions, while the French of the conquerors became commingled, often using French and English words in the same sentences so that people from both backgrounds would understand the meanings. These French words, in reality, became embedded into the English language, thus being a major reason that English has evolved into being the language of the world having the largest number of words.

So, it can be said that William the Conqueror is responsible to a large degree for the English language having the largest vocabulary in the world. In Dr. Elliott's 1994 lecture at the Richardson, Texas Civic Center, he said that the Oxford Dictionary then contained about 450,000 words. He said that a complete French dictionary would have about 150,000 words and that a complete Russian dictionary would have about 130,000 words.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the Windsor Castle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

William died September 9, 1087 from wounds received in a battle at Mantes, England. After being wounded he died at Rouen, England.

The New Law of the Land as set down by William the Conqueror and his advisors:

"First that above all things he wishes one God to be revered throughout his whole realm, one faith in Christ to be kept ever inviolate, and peace and security to be preserved between English and Normans.

"We decree also that every freeman shall affirm by oath and compact that he will be loyal to king William both within and without England, that he will preserve with him his lands and honor with all fidelity and defend him against his enemies.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"I will, moreover, that all the men I have brought with me, or who have come after me, shall be protected by my peace and shall dwell in quiet. And if any one of them shall be slain, let the lord of his murderer seize him within five days, if he can; but if he cannot, let him pay me 46 marks of silver so long as his substance avails. And when his substance is exhausted, let the whole hundred in which the murder took place pay what remains in common.

"And let every Frenchman who, in the time of king Edward, my kinsman, was a sharer in the customs of the English, pay what they call "Scotland lot", according to the laws of the English. This decree was ordained in the city of Gloucester.

"We forbid also that any live cattle shall be bought or sold for money except within cities, and this shall be done before three faithful witnesses; nor even anything old without surety and warrant. But if anyone shall do otherwise, let him pay once, and afterwards a second time for a fine.

"It was decreed there that if a Frenchman shall charge an Englishman with perjury or murder or theft or homicide or "ran," as the English call open rapine, which cannot be denied, the Englishman may defend himself, as he shall prefer, either by the ordeal of hot iron or by wager of battle. But if the Englishman be infirm, let him find another who will take his place. If one of them shall be vanquished, he shall pay a fine of 40 shillings to the king. If an Englishman shall charge a Frenchman and be unwilling to prove his accusation, either by ordeal or by wager of battle, I will, nevertheless, that the Frenchman shall acquit himself by a valid oath.

"This also I command and will, that all shall have and hold the law of the king Edward in respect of their lands and all their possessions, with the addition of those decrees I have ordained for the welfare of the English people.

"Every man who wishes to be considered a freeman shall be in pledge so that his surety shall hold him and hand him over to justice, if he shall offend in any way. And if any such shall escape, let his sureties see to it that they pay forthwith what is charge against him, and let them clear themselves of any complicity in his escape. Let recourse be had to the hundred and shire courts as our predecessors decreed. And those who ought of right to come and are unwilling to appear, shall be summoned once; and, if for the second time they refuse to come, one ox shall be taken from them, and they shall be summoned a third time. And if they do not come the third time, a second ox shall be taken from them. But if they do not come the fourth summons, the man who is unwilling to come shall forfeit from his goods the amount of the charge against him, "ceapgeld" as it is called, and in addition to this a fine to the king.

"I prohibit the sale of any man by another outside the country on pain of a fine to be paid in full to me.

"I also forbid that anyone shall be slain or hanged for any fault, but let his eyes be put out and let him be castrated. And this command shall not be violated under pain of a fine in full to me."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/laws.html>

In 1066, Halley's Comet was seen in England May 16 and thought to be abad omen. Later that year Harold II of England died at the Battle of Hastings on October 14. Illustration of Halley's Comet is shown on the Bayeux Tapestry, and the accounts which have been preserved represent it as having then appeared to be four times the size of Venus, and to have shone with a light equal to a quarter of that of the Moon.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comet_Halley

Ancestors of "James V" James

It is a positive note for me to discover that the number one priority in William's list of law principles cited above centers upon the worship of God through Christ. The fierceness of William's conquering activities had led me to believe he was pagan, which was the Norman's Norwegians' roots. However, the Roman Catholic Church, the main Church of Europe in those years, apparently had its influence on William in his French Norman rearing.

"Windsor Castle was originally built by William the Conqueror, who reigned from 1066 until his death in 1087. His original wooden castle stood on the site of the present Round Tower ("A"). The castle formed part of his defensive ring of castles surrounding London, the site chosen in part because of its easily defensible position.

"Early in William's reign he had taken possession of a manor in what today is Old Windsor, probably a Saxon royal residence. A short time later between 1070 and 1086, he leased the site of the present castle from the Manor of Clewer and built the first motte-and-bailey castle. The motte is 50-feet high and consists of chalk excavated from a surrounding ditch, which then became a moat.

"At this time the castle was defended by a wooden palisade rather than the thick stone walls seen today. The original plan of William the Conqueror's castle is unknown, but it was purely a military base and nothing structural survives from this early period. From that time onwards the castle has remained in continuous use and has undergone numerous additions and improvements. His successor William II is thought to have improved and enlarged the structure, but the Conqueror's youngest son King Henry I was the first sovereign to live within the castle.

"Windsor Castle (51°29'02"N, 0°36'16"W) is the largest inhabited castle in the world and the oldest in continuous occupation. Together with Buckingham Palace in London and Holyrood Palace in Edinburgh it is one of the principal official residences of the British monarch. The castle is located in the Berkshire town of Windsor, in the Thames Valley to the west of London.

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Windsor_Castle

Yet, both in Normandy and in England, William was faithful to tradition, and in England, especially, it became a cardinal feature of his administration to respect, and to utilize, the customs of the kingdom he had conquered. This is especially documented in David C. Douglas's book, "William the Conqueror," Chapter 12 (pp. 289-316).

Source: David C. Douglas, "William the Conqueror," University of California Press, C 1964 ISBN 0-520-00350-0 (this book is in my personal library)

Another famous landmark of London, nestled on the River Thames, is the Tower of London.

"According to Shakespeare, in his play Richard III, the Tower of London was first built by Julius Caesar. This supposed Roman origin is, however, just a myth. Its true foundation was in 1078 when William the Conqueror ordered the White Tower to be built. This was as much to protect the Normans from the people of the City of London as to protect London from outside invaders. William ordered the Tower to be built of stone which he had specially imported from France. He chose this location because he considered it to be a strategic point being opposite the site where Earl Godwin had landed in Southwark in 1051 during his Saxon rebellion against the Norman influence of Edward the Confessor. It was King Richard the Lion Heart who had the moat dug around the surrounding wall and filled with water from the Thames. The moat was not very successful until Henry III employed a Dutch moat building technique. The moat was drained in 1830, and human bones were in the refuse found at its bottom."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tower_of_London

Ancestors of "James V" James

Notes for "Maud of Flanders" Matilda:

Known as Mathilda of Flanders

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon24.html>

119 **Malcolm III Canmore** was born in 1031. He died on Nov 13, 1093. He married **Margaret**
814. (daughter of "The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward and Agatha) in 1069 in Dunfermline.

119 **Margaret** (daughter of "The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward and Agatha) was born in 1045.
815. She died on Nov 16, 1093.

Notes for Malcolm III Canmore:

King of Scotland, or known as King of Scots. He was slain while besieging Alnwick Castle.

Notes for Margaret:

Margaret was a member of the Saxon royal house of England. Thus her husband, Henry I, gained support of his Saxon subjects and strengthened his descendants' claim to the throne.

121 **"William the Conqueror" William** (son of "Duke of Normandy" Robert I and "Arletta"
860. Herleva) was born in 1027 in Falaise, France. He died on Sep 09, 1087 in Rouen, England. He married **"Maud of Flanders" Matilda** between 1051-1053 in France.

121 **"Maud of Flanders" Matilda** was born in 1032. She died on Nov 03, 1083.
861.

Notes for "William the Conqueror" William:

William the Conqueror is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. The ancestor in common with William and me is the ninth century Norwegian Viking, Eystein Glumra Ivarsson. Glumra Ivarsson is William's sixth great grandfather and Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great grandfather on my Mother's Abney side of the family. William is the 17th great grandfather of affluent Englishman Edward Southworth, first husband of Alice Carpenter, on my Father's side of the family. Alice, through her second marriage, is my seventh great grandmother. William is the 31st great grandfather to my Westmoreland grandchildren: Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam. William is the paternal grandfather of 14th great grand uncle of Edward Southworth, the first husband of my 7th great grandmother Alice Southworth Bradley.

Early in his adult life, he was known as William II, Duke of Normandy. It was later that he became better known as William I, or William the Conqueror, King of England. He subdued rebellious vassals, defeated King Henry I of France at Val des Dunes (Henry is William's first cousin, twice removed). William defeated Harold, Saxon King of England at the Battle of Hastings in 1066. He was crowned King of England on December 22, 1066, according to some reports. Others place the coronation on Christmas day. The coronation was in Westminster Abbey. So, it can be said that this part of our family did not immigrate to England. They conquered it!

"William I, a Frenchman, was the first of many, many English Kings to be crowned in Westminster Abbey. Westminster Abbey marked the scene of many great events in English history. All the English rulers from the time of William the Conqueror, except Edward V and Edward VIII, were crowned there. Technically, William was not the actual first coronation in Westminster. Harold, the counselor to King Edward the Confessor, sought to usurp the crown upon Edward's death, in spite of William's coming to claim it. Harold had a rush job done to crown himself in Westminster Abbey. However, Harold's coronation, in a sense, does not count, as he was not of Royal blood. William was of Royal blood. In fact, William

Ancestors of "James V" James

was a first cousin, once removed to King Edward the Confessor.

"What was the background about why William got involved in England?"

"King Edward the Confessor (1002?-1066), an Anglo-Saxon king descended from Alfred the Great, was crowned in 1042. As king, Edward lacked influence among England's Anglo-Saxon nobles, because he had lived in the Normandy region of northwestern France before becoming king. Edward's Anglo-Saxon father-in-law, Godwin, Earl of Wessex, tried to dominate Edward's reign. Edward resisted Godwin's efforts by relying on Norman advisers and administrators. Godwin died in 1053.

"King Edward was a pious man. He founded Westminster Abbey in 1042, which was completed in 1065. In 1161, Pope Alexander III canonized Edward (declared him a saint) and gave him the title of Confessor.

"King Richard I is the ancestor common to William I and King Edward. Richard is the great grandfather of William, and the grandfather of Edward

"Edward was childless, and a dispute arose over who should succeed him. His first cousin, once removed, William, Duke of Normandy, claimed Edward had promised him the throne. But when Edward died in 1066, the English nobles chose Harold, Godwin's son, as king. William then invaded England, defeated Harold, and was crowned king. So, William rallied the troops and stormed across the English Channel to make claim on Edward's alleged promise to him.

William invaded England on September 28, 1066 and prepared for victory.

"The Battle of Hastings Plans:

"Harold learned that William had landed at Pevensey in the south of England when he was in the north of the country recovering Stamford Bridge and York. He marched his troops south as fast as possible, stopping in London for reinforcements. He took up position at Caldbec Hill, along the Senteclache Ridge, a few miles north of Hastings. As the ridge had deep ravines, streams and marshy ground on either side, Harold blocked William's only road out of the Hastings peninsula so forcing him into a frontal attack. By positioning his army at the top of the hill, he had clear visibility all around him and forced William's army into continually running up the hill to attack. Harold built a shield wall that stretched in rows along the ridge and which was made up of his housecarls, thegns (nobles) and fyrdmen. Being skilled fighters, the housecarls and thegns were positioned in between the fyrdmen who were unskilled, poorly armed and inexperienced peasant soldiers. Harold expected the wall to hold firm against assault and for William's men to tire and weaken from having to attack uphill. This would eventually allow Harold's army to launch a counter-attack with relatively fresh troops strong enough to defeat the opponent.

"William was unprepared for Harold's speedy arrival at Caldbec Hill, but quickly gathered his troops and went to meet him at Senlache. His army was divided into three sections, each with a commander. The left section comprised mainly of Bretons, the central section were Norman under William's command, and the right section was made up of the French and Flemish. Each section was divided into three rows - the archers, the infantry and the cavalry. William's plan was to use the archers first to send their arrows into the English ranks, followed by the infantry in hand-to-hand combat and to finally advance with the cavalry who had the height and power of being on horseback. The effect would be a three pronged attack and a gradual build up in power that would demoralize the English.

"THE BATTLE:

"The battle took all day beginning early in the morning of 14th October 1066 with William's archers firing the first arrows into English ranks. William followed up his plan with an attack by the infantry and then by the cavalry, but Harold's army was stronger than expected and

Ancestors of "James V" James

William's army sustained many casualties. The Bretons on the left flank panicked due to their lack of experience, the unexpected strength of Harold's army and the noise and confusion. They failed to keep in line and got ahead of the other two sections on their right. In their panic they began to retreat. Harold's less experienced fighters broke rank when they saw the Bretons retreating, and William's army slaughtered them.

"William retreated and regrouped. The second and following assaults went according to William's plan and he supported his troops by joining in the charge on horseback. Both sides became more tired as the day wore on and suffered heavy casualties. As the supply of arrows was running low, William ordered the archers to fire them high into the air for the final assault so that they fell into the rear ranks of the English army. This caused high casualties and the collapse of the English shield wall. The Norman's penetrated the ranks and killed Harold. With the morale of the English troops shattered by the death of their leader, the battle ended in defeat for the English, although the housecarls (the *Pingalio*) and thegns continued to fight to their deaths. However, more recently, historian Nicholas Hooper criticised Larson and stated that "it is time to debunk the housecarl"; according to Hooper, housecarls were not in effect distinguishable from Saxon [thegns](#), and were mainly retainers who received lands or pay (or both), but without being really a standing army. Hooper asserts that while the Housecarles might well have had superior *esprit de corps* and more uniform training and equipment than the average Thegn, they would not necessarily have been a clearly defined military elite. Over the following months, William captured Canterbury, Winchester and London. He was crowned king on Christmas Day 1066.

"WHY DID HAROLD LOSE?"

"Harold was badly prepared to face William's troops. William had spent months preparing for invasion in a secure position and environment in Normandy. Harold's tenure as king was weak from the time of his accession and, although aware of the threat from Normandy, he was occupied by other events at home.

"William built up his army and support in feudal tradition promising lands in England to those who joined his army and eternal paradise to anyone who died during the battle. He'd also obtained the approval of the Pope in his plans so gaining greater support and turning the invasion into a crusade. The knights were recruited with their own horses, men and equipment. Over the months, William's army was rigorously disciplined and trained before being ready to sail for England, but they had to wait until September before having a favorable wind. William's plans suffered a set back when the fleet got caught in a storm and he had to take refuge and regroup in the Somme estuary. However, as a result, the distance he had to cover in his crossing was considerably shorter and the next opportunity he had to sail was at the time when Harold was in the north of England.

"William's decision to land at Pevensey was important. Pevensey was on a lagoon to the west of Hastings and was a scarcely populated area. The lagoon was a shelter from the weather as the ships could be beached high up on the land at high tide. The Hastings peninsula was bordered by Pevensey Lagoon to the west and the River Brede to the east so providing it with natural protection from attack and only one way in and out of the peninsula to the main land in the north.

"William quickly established his presence on the peninsula including building up the Roman Fort at Pevensey and taking Hastings.

"Harold was not so lucky in his plans. Some weeks before the invasion, he had mobilized troops along the coast and sent his navy to the Isle of Wight to intercept William's fleet, but he was unable to keep them there, as they became demoralized waiting for William's army to set sail and concerned about gathering in the harvest in their home towns. Harold disbanded them at the beginning of September and lost many of his ships in the same storm from which William had been forced to take refuge. When he received news that William had landed at Pevensey, Harold was fighting the invasion of Harald Hardrada of Norway in the north.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"Despite his battle plan and his choice of a strategic location, Harold's army was exhausted from having to travel north and fight at Stamford Bridge, and then hastily return south without time to rest. Harold's support from the north was limited, and, although the Earls of Mercia and Northumberland had begun riding south, they turned back when they heard of Harold's death. Except for the housecarls and thegns, Harold's men were not trained and did not have the distant attack advantage of the archers or the power of the cavalry. In accordance with English tradition, those of Harold's army who were on horseback rode to the battle location and then fought on foot while William's cavalry walked to the location and then mounted for battle.

"THE RESULTS

"William was crowned king of England on Christmas Day 1066 (some say December 22 instead). There followed 88 years of Norman rule. The French and English cultures merged and the feudal system was introduced. This led to a tough discipline and training and it took away much of the Anglo-Saxon's freedom and rights. England's strength grew and she became a powerful force in European politics because of her tie with Normandy. Her army and navy were built up as well.

In 1085 William ordered a survey of English assets and this became known as the "Doomsday Book." William's reign was not easy, and there were rebellions which were quickly suppressed, but the Norman Conquest changed the face of England forever."

Source: World Book Encyclopedia, CD version, 1998

AND HERE ARE THE LATEST WORDS!

There is another claim of world significance made for King William I, as learned from the lectures of University of North Carolina English literature professor, Dr. Elliott Engel. Dr. Engel highlighted the historical fact that conquerors of the world traditionally required the conquered peoples to use for language in commerce and in government the language of the conqueror. William the Conqueror chose not to do that. He allowed the conquered English people to continue their language in commerce and in government transactions, while the French of the conquerors became commingled, often using French and English words in the same sentences so that people from both backgrounds would understand the meanings. These French words, in reality, became embedded into the English language, thus being a major reason that English has evolved into being the language of the world having the largest number of words.

So, it can be said that William the Conqueror is responsible to a large degree for the English language having the largest vocabulary in the world. In Dr. Elliott's 1994 lecture at the Richardson, Texas Civic Center, he said that the Oxford Dictionary then contained about 450,000 words. He said that a complete French dictionary would have about 150,000 words and that a complete Russian dictionary would have about 130,000 words.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the Windsor Castle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Source:<http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-castle.php>

William died September 9, 1087 from wounds received in a battle at Mantes, England. After being wounded he died at Rouen, England.

Ancestors of "James V" James

The New Law of the Land as set down by William the Conqueror and his advisors:

"First that above all things he wishes one God to be revered throughout his whole realm, one faith in Christ to be kept ever inviolate, and peace and security to be preserved between English and Normans.

"We decree also that every freeman shall affirm by oath and compact that he will be loyal to king William both within and without England, that he will preserve with him his lands and honor with all fidelity and defend him against his enemies.

"I will, moreover, that all the men I have brought with me, or who have come after me, shall be protected by my peace and shall dwell in quiet. And if any one of them shall be slain, let the lord of his murderer seize him within five days, if he can; but if he cannot, let him pay me 46 marks of silver so long as his substance avails. And when his substance is exhausted, let the whole hundred in which the murder took place pay what remains in common.

"And let every Frenchman who, in the time of king Edward, my kinsman, was a sharer in the customs of the English, pay what they call "Scotand lot", according to the laws of the English. This decree was ordained in the city of Gloucester.

"We forbid also that any live cattle shall be bought or sold for money except within cities, and this shall be done before three faithful witnesses; nor even anything old without surety and warrant. But if anyone shall do otherwise, let him pay once, and afterwards a second time for a fine.

"It was decreed there that if a Frenchman shall charge an Englishman with perjury or murder or theft or homicide or "ran," as the English call open rapine, which cannot be denied, the Englishman may defend himself, as he shall prefer, either by the ordeal of hot iron or by wager of battle. But if the Englishman be infirm, let him find another who will take his place. If one of them shall be vanquished, he shall pay a fine of 40 shillings to the king. If an Englishman shall charge a Frenchman and be unwilling to prove his accusation, either by ordeal or by wager of battle, I will, nevertheless, that the Frenchman shall acquit himself by a valid oath.

"This also I command and will, that all shall have and hold the law of the king Edward in respect of their lands and all their possessions, with the addition of those decrees I have ordained for the welfare of the English people.

"Every man who wishes to be considered a freeman shall be in pledge so that his surety shall hold him and hand him over to justice, if he shall offend in any way. And if any such shall escape, let his sureties see to it that they pay forthwith what is charge against him, and let them clear themselves of any complicity in his escape. Let recourse be had to the hundred and shire courts as our predecessors decreed. And those who ought of right to come and are unwilling to appear, shall be summoned once; and, if for the second time they refuse to come, one ox shall be taken from them, and they shall be summoned a third time. And if they do not come the third time, a second ox shall be taken from them. But if they do not come the fourth summons, the man who is unwilling to come shall forfeit from his goods the amount of the charge against him, "ceapgeld" as it is called, and in addition to this a fine to the king.

"I prohibit the sale of any man by another outside the country on pain of a fine to be paid in full to me.

"I also forbid that anyone shall be slain or hanged for any fault, but let his eyes be put out and let him be castrated. And this command shall not be violated under pain of a fine in full to me."

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/laws.html>

In 1066, Halley's Comet was seen in England May 16 and thought to be a bad omen. Later that year Harold II of England died at the Battle of Hastings on October 14. Illustration of Halley's Comet is shown on the Bayeux Tapestry, and the accounts which have been preserved represent it as having then appeared to be four times the size of Venus, and to have shone with a light equal to a quarter of that of the Moon.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comet_Halley

It is a positive note for me to discover that the number one priority in William's list of law principles cited above centers upon the worship of God through Christ. The fierceness of William's conquering activities had led me to believe he was pagan, which was the Norman's Norwegians' roots. However, the Roman Catholic Church, the main Church of Europe in those years, apparently had its influence on William in his French Norman rearing.

"Windsor Castle was originally built by William the Conqueror, who reigned from 1066 until his death in 1087. His original wooden castle stood on the site of the present Round Tower ("A"). The castle formed part of his defensive ring of castles surrounding London, the site chosen in part because of its easily defensible position.

"Early in William's reign he had taken possession of a manor in what today is Old Windsor, probably a Saxon royal residence. A short time later between 1070 and 1086, he leased the site of the present castle from the Manor of Clewer and built the first motte-and-bailey castle. The motte is 50-feet high and consists of chalk excavated from a surrounding ditch, which then became a moat.

"At this time the castle was defended by a wooden palisade rather than the thick stone walls seen today. The original plan of William the Conqueror's castle is unknown, but it was purely a military base and nothing structural survives from this early period. From that time onwards the castle has remained in continuous use and has undergone numerous additions and improvements. His successor William II is thought to have improved and enlarged the structure, but the Conqueror's youngest son King Henry I was the first sovereign to live within the castle.

"Windsor Castle (51°29'02"N, 0°36'16"W) is the largest inhabited castle in the world and the oldest in continuous occupation. Together with Buckingham Palace in London and Holyrood Palace in Edinburgh it is one of the principal official residences of the British monarch. The castle is located in the Berkshire town of Windsor, in the Thames Valley to the west of London.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Windsor_Castle

Yet, both in Normandy and in England, William was faithful to tradition, and in England, especially, it became a cardinal feature of his administration to respect, and to utilize, the customs of the kingdom he had conquered. This is especially documented in David C. Douglas's book, "William the Conqueror," Chapter 12 (pp. 289-316).

Source: David C. Douglas, "William the Conqueror," University of California Press, C 1964 ISBN 0-520-00350-0 (this book is in my personal library)

Another famous landmark of London, nestled on the River Thames, is the Tower of London.

"According to Shakespeare, in his play Richard III, the Tower of London was first built by Julius Caesar. This supposed Roman origin is, however, just a myth. Its true foundation was in 1078 when William the Conqueror ordered the White Tower to be built. This was as much to protect the Normans from the people of the City of London as to protect London from outside invaders. William ordered the Tower to be built of stone which he had specially

Ancestors of "James V" James

imported from France. He chose this location because he considered it to be a strategic point being opposite the site where Earl Godwin had landed in Southwark in 1051 during his Saxon rebellion against the Norman influence of Edward the Confessor. It was King Richard the Lion Heart who had the moat dug around the surrounding wall and filled with water from the Thames. The moat was not very successful until Henry III employed a Dutch moat building technique. The moat was drained in 1830, and human bones were in the refuse found at its bottom."

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tower_of_London

Notes for "Maud of Flanders" Matilda:

Known as Mathilda of Flanders

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon24.html>

121 **Malcolm III Canmore** was born in 1031. He died on Nov 13, 1093. He married **Margaret**
862. (daughter of "The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward and Agatha) in 1069 in Dunfermline.

121 **Margaret** (daughter of "The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward and Agatha) was born in 1045.
863. She died on Nov 16, 1093.

Notes for Malcolm III Canmore:

King of Scotland, or known as King of Scots. He was slain while besieging Alnwick Castle.

Notes for Margaret:

Margaret was a member of the Saxon royal house of England. Thus her husband, Henry I, gained support of his Saxon subjects and strengthened his descendants' claim to the throne.

Generation 18

213 **"Richard the Good" Richard** (son of William I Longsword) was born about 933 AD in
024. Fecamp, France. He died on Nov 20, 966 AD in Fecamp, France. He married **"Emma" Agnes**.

213 **"Emma" Agnes**
025.

Notes for "Richard the Good" Richard:

He was named his father's heir May 29, 942. He also was known as Richard, the Fearless. (Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists, P. 110, Line 121E-20)

Richard I, called Richard the Good, is my third cousin, 30 times removed.

Richard I is the ancestor common to William the Conqueror and Edward III. William is to be the Norman King who conquered England to take the English crown after Edward III, his first cousin, once removed, had died. Richard is my third cousin, 30 times removed.

Notes for "Emma" Agnes:

She was Richard's second wife. His first and third marriages were to the same woman, Gunnor.

213 **"Duke of Brittany" Conan** He died in 992 AD. He married **"Ermengarde of Anjou"**

Ancestors of "James V" James

026. **Ermangarde** (daughter of "Grisgonelle" Geoffrey and Adelaide de Vermandois) in 980 AD.

213 **"Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde**
027.

213 **"The Unready" Aethelred** (son of "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar and "Ealfhryth" Elfrida) was
048. born in 968 AD. He died on Apr 23, 1016 in London, England. He married **Alfflaed**
"Alfflaed" Gunnarson (daughter of "Torin" Thored) in 985 AD.

213 **Alfflaed "Alfflaed" Gunnarson** (daughter of "Torin" Thored) was born in 968 AD. She died
049. in 1002.

Notes for "The Unready" Aethelred:

He succeeded to the throne after the murder of his half-brother, Edward II, the Martyr, at the age of ten. His reign was plagued by poor advice from his personal favorites and suspicions of his complicity in Edward's murder.

His was a rather long and ineffective reign, which was notable for little other than the payment of the Danegeld, an attempt to buy off the Viking invaders with money. The relentless invasions by the Danish Vikings, coupled with their ever-escalating demands for more money, forced him to abandon his throne in 1013. He fled to Normandy for safety, but was later recalled to his old throne at the death of Svein Forkbeard in 1014. He died in London in 1016.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon14.html>

239 **"Duke of Normandy" Robert I** (son of "le Bon (the Good)" Richard and Judith) was born on
624. Jun 22, 1000 AD. He died in Jul 1035. He married **"Arletta" Herleva**.

239 **"Arletta" Herleva** (daughter of "Falais - The Tanner" Fulbert) was born in Falasia, France.
625.

Notes for "Duke of Normandy" Robert I:

Robert was known as "the Magnificent" and "the Devil." He succeeded his brother, Richard III, as Duke of Normandy. He died while returning on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land.

Robert the Magnificent (*French: le Magnifique*) (22 June 1000 – 1–3 July 1035), was the [Duke of Normandy](#) from 1027 until his death in 1035. Owing to uncertainty over the numbering of the Dukes of Normandy he is usually called Robert I, but sometimes Robert II with his ancestor [Rollo](#) as Robert I. He was the son of [Richard II](#) and brother of [Richard III](#), who preceded him as the Duke. After less than a year after his father's death, Robert revolted against his brother's rule and deposed him. He was succeeded by his illegitimate son, [William the Conqueror](#) who became the first Norman king of England in 1066, following the [Norman conquest of England](#).

Robert was the son of [Richard II of Normandy](#) and [Judith](#), daughter of [Conan I, Duke of Brittany](#). He was also grandson of [Richard I of Normandy](#), great-grandson of [William I of Normandy](#) and great-great grandson of [Rollo](#), the Viking who founded Normandy. Before he died, Richard II had decided his elder son [Richard III](#) would succeed him while his second son Robert would become Count of [Hiémois](#). In August 1026 their father, Richard II, died and Richard III became duke, but very soon afterwards Robert rebelled against his brother, was subsequently defeated and forced to swear fealty to his older brother Richard.

When Richard III died a year later, there were suspicions that Robert had something to do with his death. Although nothing could be proved, Robert had the most to gain. The civil war Robert I had brought against his brother Richard III was still causing instability in the duchy. Private wars raged between neighboring barons. This resulted in a new aristocracy

Ancestors of "James V" James

arising in [Normandy](#) during Robert's reign. It was also during this time that many of the lesser nobility left Normandy to seek their fortunes in southern Italy and elsewhere. Soon after assuming the dukedom, possibly in revenge for supporting his brother against him, Robert I assembled an army against his uncle, [Robert](#), Archbishop of Rouen and Count of Évreux. A temporary truce allowed his uncle to leave Normandy in exile but this resulted in an edict excommunicating all of Normandy, which was only lifted when Archbishop Robert was allowed to return and his countship was restored. Robert also attacked another powerful churchman, his cousin Hugo III d'Ivry, Bishop of Bayeux, banishing him from Normandy for an extended period of time. Robert also seized a number of church properties belonging to the Abbey of Fecamp.

Despite his domestic troubles, Robert decided to intervene in the civil war in [Flanders](#) between [Baldwin V, Count of Flanders](#) and his father [Baldwin IV](#) whom the younger Baldwin had driven out of Flanders. Baldwin V, supported by king [Robert II of France](#), his father-in-law, was persuaded to make peace with his father in 1030 when Duke Robert promised the elder Baldwin his considerable military support.

Robert gave shelter to [Henry I of France](#) against his mother, [Queen Constance](#), who favored her younger son [Robert](#) to succeed to the French throne after his father Robert II. For his help Henry I rewarded Robert with the French Vexin. In the early 1030s [Alan III, Duke of Brittany](#) began expanding his influence from the area of [Rennes](#) and appeared to have designs on the area surrounding [Mont Saint-Michel](#). After sacking Dol and repelling Alan's attempts to raid Avranches, Robert mounted a major campaign against his cousin Alan III. However, Alan appealed to their uncle, Archbishop Robert of Rouen, who then brokered a peace between Duke Robert and his vassal Alan III. His cousins, the Athelings [Edward](#) and [Alfred](#), sons of his aunt [Emma of Normandy](#) and [Athelred, King of England](#) had been living at the Norman Court and at one point Robert, on their behalf, attempted to mount an invasion of England but was prevented in doing so, it was said, by unfavorable winds, that scattered and sank much of the fleet. Robert made a safe landing in Guernsey. *Gesta Normannorum Ducum* stated that [King Cnut](#) sent envoys to Duke Robert offering to settle half the Kingdom of England on Edward and Alfred. After postponing the naval invasion he chose to also postpone the decision until after he returned from Jerusalem.

By his mistress, [Herleva](#) of Falaise, he was father of:

- [William the Conqueror](#) (c. 1028–1087).

By Herleva or possibly another concubine, he was the father of:

- [Adelaide of Normandy](#), who married firstly, [Enguerrand II, Count of Ponthieu](#). She married secondly, [Lambert II, Count of Lens](#), and thirdly, [Odo II of Champagne](#).

SOURCE: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_I,_Duke_of_Normandy

Notes for "Arletta" Herleva:

She was of Danish origin.

239 **"The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward** (son of "Ironside" Edmund II and Ealgyth) was born in
630. 1016. He died in 1057. He married **Agatha**.

239 **Agatha**
631.

243 **"Duke of Normandy" Robert I** (son of "le Bon (the Good)" Richard and Judith) was born on
720. Jun 22, 1000 AD. He died in Jul 1035. He married **"Arletta" Herleva**.

243 **"Arletta" Herleva** (daughter of "Falais - The Tanner" Fulbert) was born in Falasia, France.
721.

Notes for "Duke of Normandy" Robert I:

Ancestors of "James V" James

Robert was known as "the Magnificent" and "the Devil." He succeeded his brother, Richard III, as Duke of Normandy. He died while returning on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land.

Robert the Magnificent (French: *le Magnifique*) (22 June 1000 – 1–3 July 1035), was the [Duke of Normandy](#) from 1027 until his death in 1035. Owing to uncertainty over the numbering of the Dukes of Normandy he is usually called Robert I, but sometimes Robert II with his ancestor [Rollo](#) as Robert I. He was the son of [Richard II](#) and brother of [Richard III](#), who preceded him as the Duke. After less than a year after his father's death, Robert revolted against his brother's rule and deposed him. He was succeeded by his illegitimate son, [William the Conqueror](#) who became the first Norman king of England in 1066, following the [Norman conquest of England](#).

Robert was the son of [Richard II of Normandy](#) and [Judith](#), daughter of [Conan I, Duke of Brittany](#). He was also grandson of [Richard I of Normandy](#), great-grandson of [William I of Normandy](#) and great-great grandson of [Rollo](#), the Viking who founded Normandy. Before he died, Richard II had decided his elder son [Richard III](#) would succeed him while his second son Robert would become Count of [Hiémois](#). In August 1026 their father, Richard II, died and Richard III became duke, but very soon afterwards Robert rebelled against his brother, was subsequently defeated and forced to swear fealty to his older brother Richard.

When Richard III died a year later, there were suspicions that Robert had something to do with his death. Although nothing could be proved, Robert had the most to gain. The civil war Robert I had brought against his brother Richard III was still causing instability in the duchy. Private wars raged between neighboring barons. This resulted in a new aristocracy arising in [Normandy](#) during Robert's reign. It was also during this time that many of the lesser nobility left Normandy to seek their fortunes in southern Italy and elsewhere. Soon after assuming the dukedom, possibly in revenge for supporting his brother against him, Robert I assembled an army against his uncle, [Robert](#), Archbishop of Rouen and Count of [Évreux](#). A temporary truce allowed his uncle to leave Normandy in exile but this resulted in an edict excommunicating all of Normandy, which was only lifted when Archbishop Robert was allowed to return and his countship was restored. Robert also attacked another powerful churchman, his cousin [Hugo III d'Ivry](#), Bishop of Bayeux, banishing him from Normandy for an extended period of time. Robert also seized a number of church properties belonging to the Abbey of Fecamp.

Despite his domestic troubles, Robert decided to intervene in the civil war in [Flanders](#) between [Baldwin V, Count of Flanders](#) and his father [Baldwin IV](#) whom the younger Baldwin had driven out of Flanders. Baldwin V, supported by king [Robert II of France](#), his father-in-law, was persuaded to make peace with his father in 1030 when Duke Robert promised the elder Baldwin his considerable military support.

Robert gave shelter to [Henry I of France](#) against his mother, [Queen Constance](#), who favored her younger son [Robert](#) to succeed to the French throne after his father Robert II. For his help Henry I rewarded Robert with the French Vexin. In the early 1030s [Alan III, Duke of Brittany](#) began expanding his influence from the area of [Rennes](#) and appeared to have designs on the area surrounding [Mont Saint-Michel](#). After sacking Dol and repelling Alan's attempts to raid Avranches, Robert mounted a major campaign against his cousin Alan III. However, Alan appealed to their uncle, Archbishop Robert of Rouen, who then brokered a peace between Duke Robert and his vassal Alan III. His cousins, the Athelings [Edward](#) and [Alfred](#), sons of his aunt [Emma of Normandy](#) and [Athelred, King of England](#) had been living at the Norman Court and at one point Robert, on their behalf, attempted to mount an invasion of England but was prevented in doing so, it was said, by unfavorable winds, that scattered and sank much of the fleet. Robert made a safe landing in Guernsey. *Gesta Normannorum Ducum* stated that [King Cnut](#) sent envoys to Duke Robert offering to settle half the Kingdom of England on Edward and Alfred. After postponing the naval invasion he chose to also postpone the decision until after he returned from Jerusalem.

Ancestors of "James V" James

By his mistress, [Herleva](#) of Falaise, he was father of:

- [William the Conqueror](#) (c. 1028–1087).

By Herleva or possibly another concubine, he was the father of:

- [Adelaide of Normandy](#), who married firstly, [Enguerrand II, Count of Ponthieu](#). She married secondly, [Lambert II, Count of Lens](#), and thirdly, [Odo II of Champagne](#).

SOURCE: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_I,_Duke_of_Normandy

Notes for "Arletta" Herleva:

She was of Danish origin.

243 **"The Exile or The Outlaw" Edward** (son of "Ironside" Edmund II and Ealgyth) was born in
726. 1016. He died in 1057. He married **Agatha**.

243 **Agatha**
727.

Generation 19

426 **William I Longsword** was born in 891 AD in Rouen, France. He died on Dec 17, 943 AD in
048. France.

426 **Hugh "Count of Paris" Capet** (son of Hugh Magnus and "Hedwig Of Saxony" Hedwig) was
050. born in 941 AD. He died on Oct 24, 996 AD in Les Juifs, Charres France. He married
Adelaide of "Alice" Poitou (daughter of William I of Poitou and "Adele" Gerloc) in 968 AD.

426 **Adelaide of "Alice" Poitou** (daughter of William I of Poitou and "Adele" Gerloc) was born in
051. 945 AD.

Notes for Hugh "Count of Paris" Capet:

Hugh Capet was the first of the Capetian Kings of France.(Ancesterial Roots of Certain
American Colonists, , Walter LeeShepard, Jr., 1992, p. 56, line 53-20)

426 **"Grisgonelle" Geoffrey** He married **Adelaide de Vermandois**.
054.

426 **Adelaide de Vermandois**
055.

426 **"Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar** (son of "Edmund The Magnificent" Edmund and St. Alfgifu)
096. was born in 943 AD in Wessex, England. He died on Jul 08, 975 AD in Winchester, Wessex,
England. He married **"Ealfthryth" Elfrida** (daughter of Earl Ordgar) in 965 AD.

426 **"Ealfthryth" Elfrida** (daughter of Earl Ordgar) was born in 945 AD. She died in 1000 AD.
097.

Notes for "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar:

Edgar was made King of Mercia and Northumbria in 957 and succeed to the throne of
Wessex at his brother, Eadwig's, death in 959. With this, Edgar was King of Mercia,
Northumbria and Wessex (the three most powerful kingdoms in England at that time),
simultaneously and could be considered the first ruler of a United England. Some of his
predecessors were Kings of All England by virtue of being King of Wessex and, at the same
time, enjoying a temporary military ascendancy over the other kingdoms.

Ancestors of "James V" James

He was formally crowned in 973 and received the ceremonial submission of all the other kings in Britain. He wisely recalled (St.) Dunstan from exile and made him Archbishop of Canterbury and his closest personal advisor. His reign was prosperous and peaceful and he is generally credited with the revival of the English church.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon12.html>

426 "Torin" Thored
098.

479 "le Bon (the Good)" Richard He died on Aug 28, 1026. He married **Judith** (daughter of
248. "Duke of Brittany" Conan and "Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde) about 1000 AD.

479 **Judith** (daughter of "Duke of Brittany" Conan and "Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde) was
249. born about 982 AD. She died in 1017.

Notes for "le Bon (the Good)" Richard:

Duke of Normandy.

Richard had many children by his first wife, Judith, and his thirdwife, Poppa. However, the only issue for whom we have a name is Judith's son, Robert I.

Notes for Judith:

Judith of Brittany.

479 "Falais - The Tanner" Fulbert
250.

479 "Ironsides" Edmund II (son of "The Unready" Aethelred and Alfflaed "Alfflaed" Gunnarson)
260. was born in 989 AD. He died on Nov 30, 1016. He married **Ealgyth**.

479 **Ealgyth**
261.

Notes for "Ironsides" Edmund II:

Edmund Ironside was born about 990 AD, and lived only till November 30, 1016. Edmund was King of England for only a few months. After the death of his father, Aethelred II, in April 1016, Edmund led the defense of the city of London against the invading Knut Sveinsson (Canute), and was proclaimed king by the Londoners. Meanwhile, the Witan (Council), meeting at Southampton, chose Canute as King. After a series of inconclusive military engagements, in which Edmund performed brilliantly and earned the nickname "Ironsides," he defeated the Danish forces at Oxford, Kent, but was routed by Canute's forces at Ashingdon, Essex. A subsequent peace agreement was made, with Edmund controlling Wessex and Canute controlling Mercia and Northumbria. It was also agreed that whoever survived the other would take control of the whole realm. Unfortunately for Edmund, he died in November, 1016, transferring the Kingship of All England completely to Canute.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon15.html>

His faith was in the British Church, which was not very old at that point. The earliest Christian noted in our family was a pagan Scottish King, King Ceawlin. He was baptized by a Roman Catholic Evangelist A Priest by the name of Father Columba, who'd been sent to the British Isles by Pope Gregory, to bring Christianity there. Ceawlin was baptized in 591 AD.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Though contemporary accounts of Edmund's death do not record that his death was a homicide, later speculation is that Edric, the son of the ealdorman Edrick, did slay the King privately, hoping King Canute would reward him. The King did reward Edrick by ordering him to be decapitated, and his head placed upon the highest battlement of the Tower of London.

Source: "The Oxford Book of Royal Anticdotes," The Oxford University Press, 1991, page 34.

487 **"le Bon (the Good)" Richard** He died on Aug 28, 1026. He married **Judith** (daughter of
440. "Duke of Brittany" Conan and "Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermengarde) about 1000 AD.

487 **Judith** (daughter of "Duke of Brittany" Conan and "Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermengarde) was
441. born about 982 AD. She died in 1017.

Notes for "le Bon (the Good)" Richard:

Duke of Normandy.

Richard had many children by his first wife, Judith, and his third wife, Poppa. However, the only issue for whom we have a name is Judith's son, Robert I.

Notes for Judith:

Judith of Brittany.

487 **"Falais - The Tanner" Fulbert**
442.

487 **"Ironsides" Edmund II** (son of "The Unready" Aethelred and Alfflaed "Alfflaed" Gunnarson)
452. was born in 989 AD. He died on Nov 30, 1016. He married **Ealgyth**.

487 **Ealgyth**
453.

Notes for "Ironsides" Edmund II:

Edmund Ironside was born about 990 AD, and lived only till November 30, 1016. Edmund was King of England for only a few months. After the death of his father, Aethelred II, in April 1016, Edmund led the defense of the city of London against the invading Knut Sveinsson (Canute), and was proclaimed king by the Londoners. Meanwhile, the Witan (Council), meeting at Southampton, chose Canute as King. After a series of inconclusive military engagements, in which Edmund performed brilliantly and earned the nickname "Ironsides," he defeated the Danish forces at Oxford, Kent, but was routed by Canute's forces at Ashingdon, Essex. A subsequent peace agreement was made, with Edmund controlling Wessex and Canute controlling Mercia and Northumbria. It was also agreed that whoever survived the other would take control of the whole realm. Unfortunately for Edmund, he died in November, 1016, transferring the Kingship of All England completely to Canute.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon15.html>

His faith was in the British Church, which was not very old at that point. The earliest Christian noted in our family was a pagan Scottish King, King Ceawlin. He was baptized by a Roman Catholic Evangelist A Priest by the name of Father Columba, who'd been sent to the British Isles by Pope Gregory, to bring Christianity there. Ceawlin was baptized in 591 AD.

Though contemporary accounts of Edmund's death do not record that his death was a

Ancestors of "James V" James

homicide, later speculation is that Edric, the son of the ealdorman Edrick, did slay the King privately, hoping King Canute would reward him. The King did reward Ecrick by ordering him to be decapitated, and his head placed upon the highest battlement of the Tower of London.

Source: "The Oxford Book of Royal Anticdotes," The Oxford University Press, 1991, page 34.

Generation 20

852 **Hugh Magnus** (son of Robert) was born about 895 AD. He died on Jun 16, 956 AD in
100. Deurdan, France. He married "**Hedwig Of Saxony**" **Hedwig** (daughter of "Henry of Saxony"
Henry and "Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde) in 938 AD in Maniz oder Ingelheim.

852 "**Hedwig Of Saxony**" **Hedwig** (daughter of "Henry of Saxony" Henry and "Mechtilde Of
101. Ringelheim" Mechtilde) was born before 923 AD. She died after 965 AD.

Notes for "Hedwig Of Saxony" Hedwig:

She was his third wife. We do not have the names of the first two wives.

852 **William I of Poitou** was born about 925 AD. He died on Apr 03, 963 AD. He married
102. "**Adele**" **Gerloc** (daughter of Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf and Poppa) in 935 AD.

852 "**Adele**" **Gerloc** She died on Oct 14, 962 AD.
103.

852 "**Edmund The Magnificent**" **Edmund** (son of "The Elder" Edward and "Edgiva of Kent"
192. Edgiva) was born in 920 AD. He died in 946 AD in Pucklechurch, in Gloucestershire. He
married **St. Alfgifu**.

852 **St. Alfgifu**
193.

Notes for "Edmund The Magnificent" Edmund:

Son of Edward the Elder, succeeded his half-brother, Aethelstan, with whom he had fought at Brunanburh. He combated the Norse Vikings in Northumbria and subdued them in Cumbria and Strathclyde. He entrusted these lands to an ally, Malcolm I of Scotland. Edmund met his death when he was killed at Pucklechurch, in Gloucestershire, by a robber.

852 **Earl Ordgar**
194.

958 "**Richard the Good**" **Richard** (son of William I Longsword) was born about 933 AD in
496. Fecamp, Ferance. He died on Nov 20, 966 AD in Fecamp, Ferance. He married "**Emma**"
Agnes.

958 "**Emma**" **Agnes**
497.

Notes for "Richard the Good" Richard:

He was named his father's heir May 29, 942. He also was known as Richard, the Fearless. (Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists, P. 110, Line 121E-20)

Richard I, called Richard the Good, is my third cousin, 30 times removed.

Richard I is the ancestor common to William the Conqueror and Edward III. William is to be

Ancestors of "James V" James

the Norman King who conquered England to take the English crown after Edward III, his first cousin, once removed, had died. Richard is my third cousin, 30 times removed.

Notes for "Emma" Agnes:

She was Richard's second wife. His first and third marriages were to the same woman, Gunnor.

958 **"Duke of Brittany" Conan** He died in 992 AD. He married **"Ermengarde of Anjou"**
498. **Ermangarde** (daughter of "Grisgonelle" Geoffrey and Adelaide de Vermandois) in 980 AD.

958 **"Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde**
499.

958 **"The Unready" Aethelred** (son of "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar and "Ealfhryth" Elfrida) was
520. born in 968 AD. He died on Apr 23, 1016 in London, England. He married **Alfflaed**
"Alfflaed" Gunnarson (daughter of "Torin" Thored) in 985 AD.

958 **Alfflaed "Alfflaed" Gunnarson** (daughter of "Torin" Thored) was born in 968 AD. She died
521. in 1002.

Notes for "The Unready" Aethelred:

He succeeded to the throne after the murder of his half-brother, Edward II, the Martyr, at the age of ten. His reign was plagued by poor advice from his personal favorites and suspicions of his complicity in Edward's murder.

His was a rather long and ineffective reign, which was notable for little other than the payment of the Danegeld, an attempt to buy off the Viking invaders with money. The relentless invasions by the Danish Vikings, coupled with their ever-escalating demands for more money, forced him to abandon his throne in 1013. He fled to Normandy for safety, but was later recalled to his old throne at the death of Svein Forkbeard in 1014. He died in London in 1016.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon14.html>

974 **"Richard the Good" Richard** (son of William I Longsword) was born about 933 AD in
880. Fecamp, Ferance. He died on Nov 20, 966 AD in Fecamp, Ferance. He married **"Emma"**
Agnes.

974 **"Emma" Agnes**
881.

Notes for "Richard the Good" Richard:

He was named his father's heir May 29, 942. He also was known as Richard, the Fearless. (Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists, P. 110, Line 121E-20)

Richard I, called Richard the Good, is my third cousin, 30 times removed.

Richard I is the ancestor common to William the Conqueror and Edward III. William is to be the Norman King who conquered England to take the English crown after Edward III, his first cousin, once removed, had died. Richard is my third cousin, 30 times removed.

Notes for "Emma" Agnes:

She was Richard's second wife. His first and third marriages were to the same woman, Gunnor.

Ancestors of "James V" James

974 **"Duke of Brittany" Conan** He died in 992 AD. He married **"Ermengarde of Anjou"**
882. **Ermangarde** (daughter of "Grisgonelle" Geoffrey and Adelaide de Vermandois) in 980 AD.

974 **"Ermengarde of Anjou" Ermangarde**
883.

974 **"The Unready" Aethelred** (son of "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar and "Ealffhryth" Elfrida) was
904. born in 968 AD. He died on Apr 23, 1016 in London, England. He married **Alfflaed**
"Alfflaed" Gunnarson (daughter of "Torin" Thored) in 985 AD.

974 **Alfflaed "Alfflaed" Gunnarson** (daughter of "Torin" Thored) was born in 968 AD. She died
905. in 1002.

Notes for "The Unready" Aethelred:

He succeeded to the throne after the murder of his half-brother, Edward II, the Martyr, at the age of ten. His reign was plagued by poor advice from his personal favorites and suspicions of his complicity in Edward's murder.

His was a rather long and ineffective reign, which was notable for little other than the payment of the Danegeld, an attempt to buy off the Viking invaders with money. The relentless invasions by the Danish Vikings, coupled with their ever-escalating demands for more money, forced him to abandon his throne in 1013. He fled to Normandy for safety, but was later recalled to his old throne at the death of Svein Forkbeard in 1014. He died in London in 1016.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon14.html>

Generation 21

170 **Robert** was born in 866 AD. He died on Jun 15, 923 AD in Soissons.
420
0.

170 **"Henry of Saxony" Henry** (son of "the Illustrious" Otto and Hedwig) was born in 876 AD.
420 He died on Jul 02, 936 AD in Memleben. He married **"Mechtilde Of Ringelheim"**
2. **Mechtilde**.

170 **"Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde** She died after 965 AD.

420
3. Notes for "Henry of Saxony" Henry:

He was also known as "The Flower" and was King of the Saxons.

Source: http://gedcom.surnames.com/linkswiler_jane/i0003077.htm#i3077

Notes for "Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde:

Mechtilde was Henry's second wife.

170 **Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf** He died in 927 AD. He married **Poppa**.
420
6.

170 **Poppa**
420

Ancestors of "James V" James

7. Notes for Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf:

He was known as Rollo. Also, he was known as "Rollo the Viking." Rollo was outlawed by King Harald, his Uncle. He was banished to Herbrides about 876. He participated in a Viking attack on Bayeux, where Count Berenger of Bayeux was killed, and the County's daughter, Poppa, was captured and later taken to become Rollo's wife. Rollo obtained the title of the Count of Rouen.

He conquered Normandy and was given title of Duke of Normandy by Charles III, "the Simple," King of France under the Treaty of St. Claire in 911.

170 "The Elder" Edward (son of "Alfred The Great" Alfred and "Alswitha" Ealhswith) was born
438 in 875 AD. He died in 924 AD. He married "Edgiva of Kent" Edgiva (daughter of Sigehelm)
4. in 918 AD.

170 "Edgiva of Kent" Edgiva (daughter of Sigehelm) was born in 896 AD. She died on Aug 25,
438 968 AD.

5.

Notes for "The Elder" Edward:

Son of Alfred the Great, Edward immediately succeeded his father to the throne. His main achievement was to use the military platform created by his father to bring back, under English control, the whole of the Danelaw, south of the Humber River.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon7.html>

Edward the Elder is the 37th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, in a line through their father's side of the family.

Edward's sister, Aethelflaed, after she was widowed, became a great ally for Edward, giving vigorous and respected leadership in managing the Kingdom. In some respects, it almost seemed that she had more dominance than did Edward. Some said that Edward, in effect, was king of all England, but that is subject to debate. However, it can be said that those giving him allegiance were the people of Mercia, the kings of Wales, Hywel, Clydog and Idwal and all the people of Wales. Also submitting to him was the King of the Scots and the whole Scottish nation, which accepted him as "father and lord." His subjects included the inhabitants of Northumbria (both English and Danish, Norwegians and others); together with the king of the Strathclyde Welsh.

Source: "The Oxford Book of Royal Anecdotes", Elizabeth Longford, Oxford University Press, 1991, p. 20

191 William I Longsword was born in 891 AD in Rouen, France. He died on Dec 17, 943 AD in
699 France.

2.

191 Hugh "Count of Paris" Capet (son of Hugh Magnus and "Hedwig Of Saxony" Hedwig) was
699 born in 941 AD. He died on Oct 24, 996 AD in Les Juifs, Charres France. He married
4. Adelaide of "Alice" Poitou (daughter of William I of Poitou and "Adele" Gerloc) in 968 AD.

191 Adelaide of "Alice" Poitou (daughter of William I of Poitou and "Adele" Gerloc) was born in
699 945 AD.

5.

Notes for Hugh "Count of Paris" Capet:

Hugh Capet was the first of the Capetian Kings of France. (Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists, , Walter Lee Shepard, Jr., 1992, p. 56, line 53-20)

Ancestors of "James V" James

191 "Grisgonelle" Geoffrey He married **Adelaide de Vermandois**.
699
8.

191 **Adelaide de Vermandois**
699
9.

191 "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar (son of "Edmund The Magnificent" Edmund and St. Alfgifu)
704 was born in 943 AD in Wessex, England. He died on Jul 08, 975 AD in Winchester, Wessex,
0. England. He married "Ealfthryth" Elfrida (daughter of Earl Ordgar) in 965 AD.

191 "Ealfthryth" Elfrida (daughter of Earl Ordgar) was born in 945 AD. She died in 1000 AD.
704
1. Notes for "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar:

Edgar was made King of Mercia and Northumbria in 957 and succeeded to the throne of Wessex at his brother, Eadwig's, death in 959. With this, Edgar was King of Mercia, Northumbria and Wessex (the three most powerful kingdoms in England at that time), simultaneously and could be considered the first ruler of a United England. Some of his predecessors were Kings of All England by virtue of being King of Wessex and, at the same time, enjoying a temporary military ascendancy over the other kingdoms.

He was formally crowned in 973 and received the ceremonial submission of all the other kings in Britain. He wisely recalled (St.) Dunstan from exile and made him Archbishop of Canterbury and his closest personal advisor. His reign was prosperous and peaceful and he is generally credited with the revival of the English church.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon12.html>

191 "Torin" Thored
704
2.

194 **William I Longsword** was born in 891 AD in Rouen, France. He died on Dec 17, 943 AD in
976 France.
0.

194 **Hugh "Count of Paris" Capet** (son of Hugh Magnus and "Hedwig Of Saxony" Hedwig) was
976 born in 941 AD. He died on Oct 24, 996 AD in Les Juifs, Charres France. He married
2. **Adelaide of "Alice" Poitou** (daughter of William I of Poitou and "Adele" Gerloc) in 968 AD.

194 **Adelaide of "Alice" Poitou** (daughter of William I of Poitou and "Adele" Gerloc) was born in
976 945 AD.
3.

Notes for Hugh "Count of Paris" Capet:

Hugh Capet was the first of the Capetian Kings of France. (Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists, , Walter Lee Shepard, Jr., 1992, p. 56, line 53-20)

194 "Grisgonelle" Geoffrey He married **Adelaide de Vermandois**.
976
6.

194 **Adelaide de Vermandois**
976
7.

Ancestors of "James V" James

194 **"Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar** (son of "Edmund The Magnificent" Edmund and St. Alfgifu)
980 was born in 943 AD in Wessex, England. He died on Jul 08, 975 AD in Winchester, Wessex,
8. England. He married **"Ealfhryth" Elfrida** (daughter of Earl Ordgar) in 965 AD.

194 **"Ealfhryth" Elfrida** (daughter of Earl Ordgar) was born in 945 AD. She died in 1000 AD.

980

9. Notes for "Edgar The Peaceful" Edgar:

Edgar was made King of Mercia and Northumbria in 957 and succeeded to the throne of Wessex at his brother, Eadwig's, death in 959. With this, Edgar was King of Mercia, Northumbria and Wessex (the three most powerful kingdoms in England at that time), simultaneously and could be considered the first ruler of a United England. Some of his predecessors were Kings of All England by virtue of being King of Wessex and, at the same time, enjoying a temporary military ascendancy over the other kingdoms.

He was formally crowned in 973 and received the ceremonial submission of all the other kings in Britain. He wisely recalled (St.) Dunstan from exile and made him Archbishop of Canterbury and his closest personal advisor. His reign was prosperous and peaceful and he is generally credited with the revival of the English church.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon12.html>

194 **"Torin" Thored**

981

0.

Generation 22

340 **"the Illustrious" Otto** (son of Ludolph and Oda) was born about 836 AD. He died on Nov
840 30, 912 AD. He married **Hedwig**.

4.

340 **Hedwig** She died on Dec 24, 903 AD.

840

5.

340 **Count Dietrick of Ringelheim**

840

6.

340 **Ragnvald I "The Wise" Eysteinsson** (son of Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson and
841 Aseda Rognvaldsdatter) was born about 830 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died
2. in 890 AD in Orkney, Orkney Islands, Scotland. He married **Ragnhild Hrolfsdotter** (daughter
of Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia) about 844 AD.

340 **Ragnhild Hrolfsdotter** (daughter of Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia) was born in Maer, Nord
841 Trondelag, Norway.

3.

Notes for Ragnvald I "The Wise" Eysteinsson:

Ragnvald I Eysteinsson was also known as Ragnvald the Might or Ragnvald the Wise. He was Jarl of the Uplands. He became one of King Harald's men in 866. Ragnvald gave the king the name of Harfager (FairHair). Ragnvald defeated Solve Kold of More and King Novke of Romsdal at the Battle of Solskel in 867. He was given those districts by King Harald "Fair Hair." So, he is the earliest of the Kings of Finland that we list at this time.

Ancestors of "James V" James

He represents the descendants of Eystein Glumra Ivarsson who found their way into Royalty, chiefly English Royalty, and later into American history leadership.

340 "Count of Bayeux" Berenger He died in 890 AD.
841
4.

340 "Alfred The Great" Alfred (son of "Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf and Osburga) was born in 849 AD
876 in Wantage, Berkshire (now Oxfordshire), England. He died on Oct 26, 899 AD. He married
8. "Alswitha" Ealhswith (daughter of Earl Aethelred) in 868 AD.

340 "Alswitha" Ealhswith She died about 905 AD.
876
9. Notes for "Alfred The Great" Alfred:

Alfred the Great lived from 849 AD till 26 Oct 899 AD. He has only lateral relationship to my immediate family. However is the 37th great grandfather to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. Various descendants of Alfred's were related to my ancestors. For example, King Edward the Confessor, the third great grandson of Alfred's was a first cousin, once removed to King William the Conqueror, my seventh cousin, 26 times removed.

Alfred was one of the greatest men in history. He founded the British Navy, organized the militia, compiled a code of laws, built schools and monasteries, and invited scholars to live at his court. He was a good scholar and translated many books himself. Alfred is the 24th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh great grandmother by her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. Alfred is the 38th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam.

Alfred the Great was king of the West Saxons in southwestern England. He saved his kingdom, Wessex, from the Danish Vikings and laid the basis for the unification of England under the West Saxon monarchy. He also led a revival of learning and literature. He was such an outstanding leader in war and peace that he is the only English King known as "the Great."

Alfred was born in Wantage (now in Oxfordshire), England. He was the youngest son of King Ethelwulf of Wessex. According to the Welsh writer, Asser, who wrote a biography of Alfred shortly after his death, Alfred was always eager to learn. Asser says that Alfred's mother offered a book of Anglo-Saxon poems as a prize to the first of her sons who could read it. Alfred won. As a boy, Alfred twice went to Rome, where the pope acknowledged the status of the royal house of Wessex. The journeys also showed Alfred the contrast between England and the more advanced parts of Europe.

Alfred became king in 871 at the death of his brother Ethelred. The West Saxons had been at war with the Danes for many years. After several losing battles, Alfred made peace with the invaders. But the Danes renewed their attacks and defeated Alfred at the Battle of Chippenham in 877. Alfred then defeated the Danes at the Battle of Edington in 878. The Danish leader, Guthrum, agreed to be baptized a Christian. He also agreed to stay north and east of the River Thames, in an area called the Danelaw. However, the Danes broke the peace, and Alfred renewed the war. He won London in 886. All the English people not subject to the Danes recognized Alfred as their ruler and paid him homage. The old, independent Anglo-Saxon kingdoms began to merge under the rule of Wessex.

Alfred built forts and boroughs (fortified towns) at strategic points. He stationed his fleet along the coast as protection against further invasions. He also issued a code of laws to restore peaceful government.

Before Alfred, education had declined in England, because the Danes had looted

Ancestors of "James V" James

monasteries and churches, the centers of learning. Alfred revived learning by bringing teachers and writers from Wales and continental Europe. He encouraged the translation of famous Christian books from Latin into Old English. Under his influence, the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle began to be compiled. It is now the main source for Anglo-Saxon history up to 1154.

Contributor: Joel T. Rosenthal, Ph.D., Professor. of History, State University. of New York, Stony Brook, World Book Encyclopedia 1998

The reign of Alfred was known for more than military success. He was a codifier of law, a promoter of education and a supporter of the arts. He, himself, was a scholar and translated Latin books into the Anglo-Saxon tongue. The definitive contemporary work on Alfred's life is an unfinished account in Latin by Bishop Asser, a Welshman, bishop of Sherbourne and Alfred's counsellor. After his death, he was buried in his capital city of Winchester."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon6.html>

Although similar to the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle in its analytistic approach, Bishop Asser personalized his "Life of King Alfred" so that the man, and not just the Christian king who vanquished the paganistic heathen, was presented. Asser's "Life" differs also in its use of Latin, not the vernacular in which most sources from Alfred's reign are written.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/docs/asser.html>

Notes for "Alswitha" Ealhswith:

She was known as Æhlswith of the Gainas.

340 **Sigehelm**
877
0.

383 **Hugh Magnus** (son of Robert) was born about 895 AD. He died on Jun 16, 956 AD in
398 Deurdan, France. He married "**Hedwig Of Saxony**" **Hedwig** (daughter of "Henry of Saxony"
8. Henry and "Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde) in 938 AD in Maniz oder Ingelheim.

383 "**Hedwig Of Saxony**" **Hedwig** (daughter of "Henry of Saxony" Henry and "Mechtilde Of
398 Ringelheim" Mechtilde) was born before 923 AD. She died after 965 AD.
9.

Notes for "Hedwig Of Saxony" Hedwig:

She was his third wife. We do not have the names of the first twowives.

383 **William I of Poitou** was born about 925 AD. He died on Apr 03, 963 AD. He married
399 "**Adele**" **Gerloc** (daughter of Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf and Poppa) in 935 AD.
0.

383 "**Adele**" **Gerloc** She died on Oct 14, 962 AD.
399
1.

383 "**Edmund The Magnificent**" **Edmund** (son of "The Elder" Edward and "Edgiva of Kent"
408 Edgiva) was born in 920 AD. He died in 946 AD in Pucklechurch, in Gloucestershire. He
0. married **St. AElfifu**.

Ancestors of "James V" James

383 **St. Alfgifu**

408

1. Notes for "Edmund The Magnificent" Edmund:

Son of Edward the Elder, succeeded his half-brother, Aethelstan, withwhom he had fought at Brunanburh. He combated the Norse Vikings inNorthumbria and subdued them in Cumbria and Strathclyde. He entrustedthese lands to an ally, Malcolm I of Scotland. Edmund met his deathwhen he was killed at Pucklechurch, in Gloucestershire, by a robber.

383 **Earl Ordgar**

408

2.

389 **Hugh Magnus** (son of Robert) was born about 895 AD. He died on Jun 16, 956 AD in
952 Deurdan, France. He married "**Hedwig Of Saxony**" **Hedwig** (daughter of "Henry of Saxony"
4. Henry and "Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde) in 938 AD in Maniz oder Ingelheim.

389 "**Hedwig Of Saxony**" **Hedwig** (daughter of "Henry of Saxony" Henry and "Mechtilde Of
952 Ringelheim" Mechtilde) was born before 923 AD. She died after 965 AD.

5.

Notes for "Hedwig Of Saxony" Hedwig:

She was his third wife. We do not have the names of the first twowives.

389 **William I of Poitou** was born about 925 AD. He died on Apr 03, 963 AD. He married
952 "**Adele**" **Gerloc** (daughter of Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf and Poppa) in 935 AD.

6.

389 "**Adele**" **Gerloc** She died on Oct 14, 962 AD.

952

7.

389 "**Edmund The Magnificent**" **Edmund** (son of "The Elder" Edward and "Edgiva of Kent"
961 Edgiva) was born in 920 AD. He died in 946 AD in Pucklechurch, in Gloucestershire. He
6. married **St. Alfgifu**.

389 **St. Alfgifu**

961

7. Notes for "Edmund The Magnificent" Edmund:

Son of Edward the Elder, succeeded his half-brother, Aethelstan, withwhom he had fought at Brunanburh. He combated the Norse Vikings inNorthumbria and subdued them in Cumbria and Strathclyde. He entrustedthese lands to an ally, Malcolm I of Scotland. Edmund met his deathwhen he was killed at Pucklechurch, in Gloucestershire, by a robber.

389 **Earl Ordgar**

961

8.

Generation 23

681 **Ludolph** was born about 816 AD. He died on Sep 06, 864 AD. He married **Oda**.

680

8.

681 **Oda**

Ancestors of "James V" James

680
9.

681 **Arnulf** He married **Oda**.
681
0.

681 **Oda**
681
1.

681 **Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson** (son of Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson and Eysteinsdatter)
682 was born in 788 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died about 872 AD in Norway. He
4. married **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter**.

681 **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter** (daughter of Rangwald) was born about 804 AD in Maer, Nord
682 Trondelag, Norway.
5.

Notes for Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson:

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson was Earl or Jarl of the Uplands about the year 810 AD. Eystein is the ancestor the Abney's have in common with the line of William the Conqueror. He is Williams's sixth great grandfather and my 32nd great grandfather. Eystein's title is Earl of Hendemarken. He was known as 'the Noisy,' possibly an aka for Eyesteinof ORKNEY

Source:<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~jamesdow/s052/f280253.htm>

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the 25th great grandfather of the first President of the United States, General George Washington. He is the 29th great grandfather of President Abraham Lincoln. Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great grandfather.

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the ancestor in common between my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland and her husband, Steven O. Westmoreland. They are related to each other as 34th cousins, four times removed, as well as by husband and wife status.

681 **Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia**
682
6.

681 **"Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf** (son of Egbert and Redburg) was born in 806 AD in Wessex,
753 England. He died on Jan 13, 858 AD in England. He married **Osburga**.
6.

681 **Osburga**
753
7.

Notes for "Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf:

Aethelwulf is the 25th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, my 25thcousin, eight times removed, and the first husband of Alice Carpenter. She is my eighth great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Govenor William Bradford. Ethelwulf (as it also is spelled) is the 39th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katherine (Katie), John David (Jack), and twins Lilyand Sarah. Aethelwulf is the 32nd great grandfather of English Christian of great staute, Smith Wigglesworth.

Aethelwulf was the son of Egbert and a sub-king of Kent. He assumed the throne of Wessex upon his father's death in 839. His reign is characterized by the usual Viking invasions and repulsions common to all English rulers of the time, but the making of war was not his chief

Ancestors of "James V" James

claim to fame.

Aethelwulf is remembered, however dimly, as a highly religious man who cared about the establishment and preservation of the church. He was also a wealthy man and controlled vast resources. Out of these resources, he gave generously, to Rome and to religious houses that were in need.

He was an only child, but fathered five sons, by his first wife, Osburga. He recognized that there could be difficulties with contention over the succession. He devised a scheme which would guarantee (insofar as it was possible to do so) that each child would have his turn on the throne without having to worry about rival claims from his siblings. Aethelwulf provided that the oldest living child would succeed to the throne and would control all the resources of the crown, without having them divided among the others, so that he would have adequate resources to rule. That he was able to provide for the continuation of his dynasty is a matter of record, but he was not able to guarantee familial harmony with his plan. This is proved by what we know of the foul plotting of his son, Aethelbald, while Aethelwulf was on pilgrimage to Rome in 855.

Aethelwulf was a wise and capable ruler, whose vision made possible the beneficial reign of his youngest son, Alfred the Great.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon2.html>

Ethelwulf became king of the West Saxons in England when his father, Egbert, died in 839. In 851, he became the first ruler in all western Europe to defeat a Viking army in a major battle.

Source: David L. Beckwith, <http://www.smokykin.com/ged/f002/f67/a0026721.htm>

681 **Earl Aethelred**
753
8.

766 **Robert** was born in 866 AD. He died on Jun 15, 923 AD in Soissons.
797
6.

766 **"Henry of Saxony" Henry** (son of "the Illustrious" Otto and Hedwig) was born in 876 AD.
797 He died on Jul 02, 936 AD in Memleben. He married **"Mechtilde Of Ringelheim"**
8. **Mechtilde**.

766 **"Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde** She died after 965 AD.
797
9. Notes for "Henry of Saxony" Henry:

He was also known as "The Flower" and was King of the Saxons.

Source: http://gedcom.surnames.com/linkswiler_jane/i0003077.htm#i3077

Notes for "Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde:

Mechtilde was Henry's second wife.

766 **Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf** He died in 927 AD. He married **Poppa**.
798
2.

766 **Poppa**

Ancestors of "James V" James

798

3. Notes for Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf:

He was known as Rollo. Also, he was known as "Rollo the Viking." Rollo was outlawed by King Harald, his Uncle. He was banished to Herbrides about 876. He participated in a Viking attack on Bayeux, where Count Berenger of Bayeux was killed, and the County's daughter, Poppa, was captured and later taken to become Rollo's wife. Rollo obtained the title of the Count of Rouen.

He conquered Normandy and was given title of Duke of Normandy by Charles III, "the Simple," King of France under the Treaty of St. Claire in 911.

766

816 **"The Elder" Edward** (son of "Alfred The Great" Alfred and "Alswitha" Ealhswith) was born in 875 AD. He died in 924 AD. He married **"Edgiva of Kent" Edgiva** (daughter of Sigehelm) in 918 AD.

766

816 **"Edgiva of Kent" Edgiva** (daughter of Sigehelm) was born in 896 AD. She died on Aug 25, 968 AD.

1.

Notes for "The Elder" Edward:

Son of Alfred the Great, Edward immediately succeeded his father to the throne. His main achievement was to use the military platform created by his father to bring back, under English control, the whole of the Danelaw, south of the Humber River.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon7.html>

Edward the Elder is the 37th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, in a line through their father's side of the family.

Edward's sister, Aethelflaed, after she was widowed, became a great ally for Edward, giving vigorous and respected leadership in managing the Kingdom. In some respects, it almost seemed that she had more dominance than did Edward. Some said that Edward, in effect, was king of all England, but that is subject to debate. However, it can be said that those giving him allegiance were the people of Mercia, the kings of Wales, Hywel, Clydog and Idwal and all the people of Wales. Also submitting to him was the King of the Scots and the whole Scottish nation, which accepted him as "father and lord." His subjects included the inhabitants of Northumbria (both English and Danish, Norwegians and others); together with the king of the Strathclyde Welsh.

Source: "The Oxford Book of Royal Anecdotes", Elizabeth Longford, Oxford University Press, 1991, p. 20

779

904

8.

Robert was born in 866 AD. He died on Jun 15, 923 AD in Soissons.

779

905

0.

"Henry of Saxony" Henry (son of "the Illustrious" Otto and Hedwig) was born in 876 AD. He died on Jul 02, 936 AD in Memleben. He married **"Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde**.

779

905

1.

"Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde She died after 965 AD.

Notes for "Henry of Saxony" Henry:

He was also known as "The Flower" and was King of the Saxons.

Source: http://gedcom.surnames.com/linkswiler_jane/i0003077.htm#i3077

Ancestors of "James V" James

Notes for "Mechtilde Of Ringelheim" Mechtilde:

Mechtilde was Henry's second wife.

779 **Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf** He died in 927 AD. He married **Poppa**.
905
4.

779 **Poppa**
905
5. Notes for Ganger "Rolf the Walker" Rolf:

He was known as Rollo. Also, he was known as "Rollo the Viking." Rollo was outlawed by King Harald, his Uncle. He was banished to Herbrides about 876. He participated in a Viking attack on Bayeux, where Count Berenger of Bayeux was killed, and the County's daughter, Poppa, was captured and later taken to become Rollo's wife. Rollo obtained the title of the Count of Rouen.

He conquered Normandy and was given title of Duke of Normandy by Charles III, "the Simple," King of France under the Treaty of St. Claire in 911.

779 **"The Elder" Edward** (son of "Alfred The Great" Alfred and "Alswitha" Ealhswith) was born
923 in 875 AD. He died in 924 AD. He married **"Edgiva of Kent" Edgiva** (daughter of Sigehelm)
2. in 918 AD.

779 **"Edgiva of Kent" Edgiva** (daughter of Sigehelm) was born in 896 AD. She died on Aug 25,
923 968 AD.
3.

Notes for "The Elder" Edward:

Son of Alfred the Great, Edward immediately succeeded his father to the throne. His main achievement was to use the military platform created by his father to bring back, under English control, the whole of the Danelaw, south of the Humber River.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon7.html>

Edward the Elder is the 37th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, in a line through their father's side of the family.

Edward's sister, Aethelflaed, after she was widowed, became a great ally for Edward, giving vigorous and respected leadership in managing the Kingdom. In some respects, it almost seemed that she had more dominance than did Edward. Some said that Edward, in effect, was king of all England, but that is subject to debate. However, it can be said that those giving him allegiance were the people of Mercia, the kings of Wales, Hywel, Clydog and Idwal and all the people of Wales. Also submitting to him was the King of the Scots and the whole Scottish nation, which accepted him as "father and lord." His subjects included the inhabitants of Northumbria (both English and Danish, Norwegians and others); together with the king of the Strathclyde Welsh.

Source: "The Oxford Book of Royal Anecdotes", Elizabeth Longford, Oxford University Press, 1991, p. 20

Generation 24

136 **Carloman** He married **Litwinde**.
336
20.

Ancestors of "James V" James

136 **Litwinde**
336
21.

136 **Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson** (son of Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson) was born in
336 Oppland, Norway. He married **Eysteinsdatter** in Oppland, Norway.
48.

136 **Eysteinsdatter** was born about 785 AD in Trondeim, Norway.
336
49. Notes for Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson:

Ivar "the Great" was Jarl of the Uplands. He was living around 800, but we do not have birth and death dates on him. He is my thirty-third great grandfather.

136 **Rangwald**
336
50.

136 **Egbert** (son of Eahlmund and UNNAMED) was born in 775 AD in Wessex, England. He died
350 on Nov 19, 838 AD in Wessex, England. He married **Redburg**.
72.

136 **Redburg** was born in 788 AD.
350
73. Notes for Egbert:

Egbert was King of Wessex in England from 802 to his death in 839. Offa, the King of Mercia drove him into exile in 789. Egbert lived in Gaul (France) for three years, where he saw the expansion of Charlemagne's empire. After gaining the West Saxon throne, Egbert destroyed the supremacy of Mercia in England. By conquering Cornwall, Kent, Surrey, and Sussex, he enlarged Wessex and made his kingdom supreme. The Mercians, East Anglians, and Northumbrians recognized his rule. His reign foreshadowed the later growth of a united England.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon1.html>

136 **"The Royal Cup Bearer" Oslac**
350
74.

153 **"the Illustrious" Otto** (son of Ludolph and Oda) was born about 836 AD. He died on Nov
359 30, 912 AD. He married **Hedwig**.
56.

153 **Hedwig** She died on Dec 24, 903 AD.
359
57.

153 **Count Dietrick of Ringelheim**
359
58.

153 **Ragnvald I "The Wise" Eysteinnsson** (son of Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson and
359 Aseda Rognvaldsdatter) was born about 830 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died

Ancestors of "James V" James

64. in 890 AD in Orkney, Orkney Islands, Scotland. He married **Ragnhild Hrolfsdotter** (daughter of Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia) about 844 AD.

153 **Ragnhild Hrolfsdotter** (daughter of Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia) was born in Maer, Nord
359 Trondelag, Norway.
65.

Notes for Ragnvald I "The Wise" Eysteinnsson:

Ragnvald I Eysteinnsson was also known as Ragnvald the Might or Ragnvald the Wise. He was Jarl of the Uplands. He became one of King Harald's men in 866. Ragnvald gave the king the name of Harfager (FairHair). Ragnvald defeated Solve Kold of More and King Novke of Romsdal at the Battle of Solskel in 867. He was given those districts by King Harald "Fair Hair." So, he is the earliest of the Kings of Finland that we list at this time.

He represents the descendants of Eystein Glumra Ivarsson who found their way into Royalty, chiefly English Royalty, and later into American history leadership.

153 **"Count of Bayeux" Berenger** He died in 890 AD.
359
66.

153 **"Alfred The Great" Alfred** (son of "Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf and Osburga) was born in 849 AD
363 in Wantage, Berkshire (now Oxfordshire), England. He died on Oct 26, 899 AD. He married
20. **"Alswitha" Ealhswith** (daughter of Earl Aethelred) in 868 AD.

153 **"Alswitha" Ealhswith** She died about 905 AD.
363
21. Notes for "Alfred The Great" Alfred:

Alfred the Great lived from 849 AD till 26 Oct 899 AD. He has only lateral relationship to my immediate family. However is the 37th great grandfather to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. Various descendants of Alfred's were related to my ancestors. For example, King Edward the Confessor, the third great grandson of Alfred's was a first cousin, once removed to King William the Conqueror, my seventh cousin, 26 times removed.

Alfred was one of the greatest men in history. He founded the British Navy, organized the militia, compiled a code of laws, built schools and monasteries, and invited scholars to live at his court. He was a good scholar and translated many books himself. Alfred is the 24th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh great grandmother by her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. Alfred is the 38th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam.

Alfred the Great was king of the West Saxons in southwestern England. He saved his kingdom, Wessex, from the Danish Vikings and laid the basis for the unification of England under the West Saxon monarchy. He also led a revival of learning and literature. He was such an outstanding leader in war and peace that he is the only English King known as "the Great."

Alfred was born in Wantage (now in Oxfordshire), England. He was the youngest son of King Ethelwulf of Wessex. According to the Welsh writer, Asser, who wrote a biography of Alfred shortly after his death, Alfred was always eager to learn. Asser says that Alfred's mother offered a book of Anglo-Saxon poems as a prize to the first of her sons who could read it. Alfred won. As a boy, Alfred twice went to Rome, where the pope acknowledged the status of the royal house of Wessex. The journeys also showed Alfred the contrast between England and the more advanced parts of Europe.

Alfred became king in 871 at the death of his brother Ethelred. The West Saxons had

Ancestors of "James V" James

been at war with the Danes for many years. After several losing battles, Alfred made peace with the invaders. But the Danes renewed their attacks and defeated Alfred at the Battle of Chippenham in 877. Alfred then defeated the Danes at the Battle of Edington in 878. The Danish leader, Guthrum, agreed to be baptized a Christian. He also agreed to stay north and east of the River Thames, in an area called the Danelaw. However, the Danes broke the peace, and Alfred renewed the war. He won London in 886. All the English people not subject to the Danes recognized Alfred as their ruler and paid him homage. The old, independent Anglo-Saxon kingdoms began to merge under the rule of Wessex.

Alfred built forts and boroughs (fortified towns) at strategic points. He stationed his fleet along the coast as protection against further invasions. He also issued a code of laws to restore peaceful government.

Before Alfred, education had declined in England, because the Danes had looted monasteries and churches, the centers of learning. Alfred revived learning by bringing teachers and writers from Wales and continental Europe. He encouraged the translation of famous Christian books from Latin into Old English. Under his influence, the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle began to be compiled. It is now the main source for Anglo-Saxon history up to 1154.

Contributor: Joel T. Rosenthal, Ph.D., Professor. of History, State University. of New York, Stony Brook, World Book Encyclopedia 1998

The reign of Alfred was known for more than military success. He was a codifier of law, a promoter of education and a supporter of the arts. He, himself, was a scholar and translated Latin books into the Anglo-Saxon tongue. The definitive contemporary work on Alfred's life is an unfinished account in Latin by Bishop Asser, a Welshman, bishop of Sherbourne and Alfred's counsellor. After his death, he was buried in his capital city of Winchester."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon6.html>

Although similar to the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle in its analytistic approach, Bishop Asser personalized his "Life of King Alfred" so that the man, and not just the Christian king who vanquished the paganistic heathen, was presented. Asser's "Life" differs also in its use of Latin, not the vernacular in which most sources from Alfred's reign are written.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/docs/asser.html>

Notes for "Alswitha" Ealhswith:

She was known as Æhlswith of the Gainas.

153 **Sigehelm**
363
22.

155 **"the Illustrious" Otto** (son of Ludolph and Oda) was born about 836 AD. He died on Nov
981 30, 912 AD. He married **Hedwig**.
00.

155 **Hedwig** She died on Dec 24, 903 AD.
981
01.

155 **Count Dietrick of Ringelheim**
981

Ancestors of "James V" James

02.

155 **Ragnvald I "The Wise" Eysteinnsson** (son of Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson and
981 Aseda Rognvaldsdatter) was born about 830 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died
08. in 890 AD in Orkney, Orkney Islands, Scotland. He married **Ragnhild Hrolfsdotter** (daughter
of Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia) about 844 AD.

155 **Ragnhild Hrolfsdotter** (daughter of Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia) was born in Maer, Nord
981 Trondelag, Norway.
09.

Notes for Ragnvald I "The Wise" Eysteinnsson:

Ragnvald I Eysteinnsson was also known as Ragnvald the Might or Ragnvald the Wise. He was Jarl of the Uplands. He became one of King Harald's men in 866. Ragnvald gave the king the name of Harfager (FairHair). Ragnvald defeated Solve Kold of More and King Novke of Romsdal at the Battle of Solskel in 867. He was given those districts by King Harald "Fair Hair." So, he is the earliest of the Kings of Finland that we list at this time.

He represents the descendants of Eystein Glumra Ivarsson who found their way into Royalty, chiefly English Royalty, and later into American history leadership.

155 **"Count of Bayeux" Berenger** He died in 890 AD.
981
10.

155 **"Alfred The Great" Alfred** (son of "Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf and Osburga) was born in 849 AD
984 in Wantage, Berkshire (now Oxfordshire), England. He died on Oct 26, 899 AD. He married
64. **"Alswitha" Ealhswith** (daughter of Earl Aethelred) in 868 AD.

155 **"Alswitha" Ealhswith** She died about 905 AD.
984
65. Notes for "Alfred The Great" Alfred:

Alfred the Great lived from 849 AD till 26 Oct 899 AD. He has only lateral relationship to my immediate family. However is the 37th great grandfather to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. Various descendants of Alfred's were related to my ancestors. For example, King Edward the Confessor, the third great grandson of Alfred's was a first cousin, once removed to King William the Conqueror, my seventh cousin, 26 times removed.

Alfred was one of the greatest men in history. He founded the British Navy, organized the militia, compiled a code of laws, built schools and monasteries, and invited scholars to live at his court. He was a good scholar and translated many books himself. Alfred is the 24th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh great grandmother by her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. Alfred is the 38th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam.

Alfred the Great was king of the West Saxons in southwestern England. He saved his kingdom, Wessex, from the Danish Vikings and laid the basis for the unification of England under the West Saxon monarchy. He also led a revival of learning and literature. He was such an outstanding leader in war and peace that he is the only English King known as "the Great."

Alfred was born in Wantage (now in Oxfordshire), England. He was the youngest son of King Ethelwulf of Wessex. According to the Welsh writer, Asser, who wrote a biography of Alfred shortly after his death, Alfred was always eager to learn. Asser says that Alfred's mother offered a book of Anglo-Saxon poems as a prize to the first of her sons who could read it. Alfred won. As a boy, Alfred twice went to Rome, where the pope acknowledged

Ancestors of "James V" James

the status of the royal house of Wessex. The journeys also showed Alfred the contrast between England and the more advanced parts of Europe.

Alfred became king in 871 at the death of his brother Ethelred. The West Saxons had been at war with the Danes for many years. After several losing battles, Alfred made peace with the invaders. But the Danes renewed their attacks and defeated Alfred at the Battle of Chippenham in 877. Alfred then defeated the Danes at the Battle of Edington in 878. The Danish leader, Guthrum, agreed to be baptized a Christian. He also agreed to stay north and east of the River Thames, in an area called the Danelaw. However, the Danes broke the peace, and Alfred renewed the war. He won London in 886. All the English people not subject to the Danes recognized Alfred as their ruler and paid him homage. The old, independent Anglo-Saxon kingdoms began to merge under the rule of Wessex.

Alfred built forts and boroughs (fortified towns) at strategic points. He stationed his fleet along the coast as protection against further invasions. He also issued a code of laws to restore peaceful government.

Before Alfred, education had declined in England, because the Danes had looted monasteries and churches, the centers of learning. Alfred revived learning by bringing teachers and writers from Wales and continental Europe. He encouraged the translation of famous Christian books from Latin into Old English. Under his influence, the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle began to be compiled. It is now the main source for Anglo-Saxon history up to 1154.

Contributor: Joel T. Rosenthal, Ph.D., Professor. of History, State University. of New York, Stony Brook, World Book Encyclopedia 1998

The reign of Alfred was known for more than military success. He was a codifier of law, a promoter of education and a supporter of the arts. He, himself, was a scholar and translated Latin books into the Anglo-Saxon tongue. The definitive contemporary work on Alfred's life is an unfinished account in Latin by Bishop Asser, a Welshman, bishop of Sherbourne and Alfred's counsellor. After his death, he was buried in his capital city of Winchester."

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon6.html>

Although similar to the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle in its analytical approach, Bishop Asser personalized his "Life of King Alfred" so that the man, and not just the Christian king who vanquished the paganistic heathen, was presented. Asser's "Life" differs also in its use of Latin, not the vernacular in which most sources from Alfred's reign are written.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/docs/asser.html>

Notes for "Alswitha" Ealhswith:

She was known as Ælswith of the Gainas.

155 **Sigehelm**
984
66.

Generation 25

272 **"the German" Louis** He married **Emma**.
672
40.

Ancestors of "James V" James

272 **Emma**
672
41.

272 **Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson** (son of Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson) was
672 born about 750 AD in Norway.
96.

272 **Eahlmund** (son of Eafa and UNNAMED) was born in 758 AD in Wessex, England. He died
701 in 788 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
44.

272 **UNNAMED** was born in 762 AD.
701
45.

306 **Ludolph** was born about 816 AD. He died on Sep 06, 864 AD. He married **Oda**.
719
12.

306 **Oda**
719
13.

306 **Arnulf** He married **Oda**.
719
14.

306 **Oda**
719
15.

306 **Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson** (son of Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson and Eysteinsdatter)
719 was born in 788 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died about 872 AD in Norway. He
28. married **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter**.

306 **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter** (daughter of Rangwald) was born about 804 AD in Maer, Nord
719 Trondelag, Norway.
29.

Notes for Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson:

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson was Earl or Jarl of the Uplands about the year 810 AD. Eystein is the ancestor the Abney's have in common with the line of William the Conqueror. He is Williams's sixth great grandfather and my 32nd great grandfather. Eystein's title is Earl of Hendemarken. He was known as 'the Noisy,' possibly an aka for Eyesteinof ORKNEY

Source:<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~jamesdow/s052/f280253.htm>

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the 25th great grandfather of the first President of the United States, General George Washington. He is the 29th great grandfather of President Abraham Lincoln. Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great grandfather.

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the ancestor in common between my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland and her husband, Steven O. Westmoreland. They are related to each other as 34th cousins, four times removed, as well as by husband and wife status.

Ancestors of "James V" James

306 **Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia**
719
30.

306 **"Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf** (son of Egbert and Redburg) was born in 806 AD in Wessex,
726 England. He died on Jan 13, 858 AD in England. He married **Osburga**.
40.

306 **Osburga**
726
41.

Notes for "Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf:

Aethelwulf is the 25th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, my 25thcousin, eight times removed, and the first husband of Alice Carpenter. She is my eighth great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Ethelwulf (as it also is spelled) is the 39th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katherine (Katie), John David (Jack), and twins Lily and Sarah. Aethelwulf is the 32nd great grandfather of English Christian of great stature, Smith Wigglesworth.

Aethelwulf was the son of Egbert and a sub-king of Kent. He assumed the throne of Wessex upon his father's death in 839. His reign is characterized by the usual Viking invasions and repulsions common to all English rulers of the time, but the making of war was not his chief claim to fame.

Aethelwulf is remembered, however dimly, as a highly religious man who cared about the establishment and preservation of the church. He was also a wealthy man and controlled vast resources. Out of these resources, he gave generously, to Rome and to religious houses that were in need.

He was an only child, but fathered five sons, by his first wife, Osburga. He recognized that there could be difficulties with contention over the succession. He devised a scheme which would guarantee (insofar as it was possible to do so) that each child would have his turn on the throne without having to worry about rival claims from his siblings. Aethelwulf provided that the oldest living child would succeed to the throne and would control all the resources of the crown, without having them divided among the others, so that he would have adequate resources to rule. That he was able to provide for the continuation of his dynasty is a matter of record, but he was not able to guarantee familial harmony with his plan. This is proved by what we know of the foul plotting of his son, Aethelbald, while Aethelwulf was on pilgrimage to Rome in 855.

Aethelwulf was a wise and capable ruler, whose vision made possible the beneficial reign of his youngest son, Alfred the Great.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon2.html>

Ethelwulf became king of the West Saxons in England when his father, Egbert, died in 839. In 851, he became the first ruler in all western Europe to defeat a Viking army in a major battle.

Source: David L. Beckwith, <http://www.smokykin.com/ged/f002/f67/a0026721.htm>

306 **Earl Aethelred**
726
42.

311 **Ludolph** was born about 816 AD. He died on Sep 06, 864 AD. He married **Oda**.
962
00.

Ancestors of "James V" James

311 **Oda**
962
01.

311 **Arnulf** He married **Oda**.
962
02.

311 **Oda**
962
03.

311 **Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson** (son of Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson and Eysteinsdatter)
962 was born in 788 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died about 872 AD in Norway. He
16. married **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter**.

311 **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter** (daughter of Rangwald) was born about 804 AD in Maer, Nord
962 Trondelag, Norway.
17.

Notes for Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson:

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson was Earl or Jarl of the Uplands about the year 810 AD. Eystein is the ancestor the Abney's have in common with the line of William the Conqueror. He is Williams's sixth great grandfather and my 32nd great grandfather. Eystein's title is Earl of Hendemarken. He was known as 'the Noisy,' possibly an aka for Eyesteinof ORKNEY

Source:<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~jamesdow/s052/f280253.htm>

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the 25th great grandfather of the first President of the United States, General George Washington. He is the 29th great grandfather of President Abraham Lincoln. Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great grandfather.

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the ancestor in common between my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland and her husband, Steven O. Westmoreland. They are related to each other as 34th cousins, four times removed, as well as by husband and wife status.

311 **Hrolf "The Nose" Nefia**
962
18.

311 **"Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf** (son of Egbert and Redburg) was born in 806 AD in Wessex,
969 England. He died on Jan 13, 858 AD in England. He married **Osburga**.
28.

311 **Osburga**
969
29.

Notes for "Ethelwulf" Aethelwulf:

Aethelwulf is the 25th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, my 25thcousin, eight times removed, and the first husband of Alice Carpenter. She is my eighth great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Govenor William Bradford. Ethelwulf (as it also isspelled) is the 39th great grandfather of our Westmorelandgrandchildren, Katherine (Katie), John David (Jack), and twins Lilyand Sarah. Aethelwulf is the 32nd great grandfather of EnglishChristian of great staute, Smith Wigglesworth.

Aethelwulf was the son of Egbert and a sub-king of Kent. He assumedthe throne of Wessex

Ancestors of "James V" James

upon his father's death in 839. His reign is characterized by the usual Viking invasions and repulsions common to all English rulers of the time, but the making of war was not his chief claim to fame.

Aethelwulf is remembered, however dimly, as a highly religious man who cared about the establishment and preservation of the church. He was also a wealthy man and controlled vast resources. Out of these resources, he gave generously, to Rome and to religious houses that were in need.

He was an only child, but fathered five sons, by his first wife, Osburga. He recognized that there could be difficulties with contention over the succession. He devised a scheme which would guarantee (insofar as it was possible to do so) that each child would have his turn on the throne without having to worry about rival claims from his siblings. Aethelwulf provided that the oldest living child would succeed to the throne and would control all the resources of the crown, without having them divided among the others, so that he would have adequate resources to rule. That he was able to provide for the continuation of his dynasty is a matter of record, but he was not able to guarantee familial harmony with his plan. This is proved by what we know of the foul plotting of his son, Aethelbald, while Aethelwulf was on pilgrimage to Rome in 855.

Aethelwulf was a wise and capable ruler, whose vision made possible the beneficial reign of his youngest son, Alfred the Great.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon2.html>

Ethelwulf became king of the West Saxons in England when his father, Egbert, died in 839. In 851, he became the first ruler in all western Europe to defeat a Viking army in a major battle.

Source: David L. Beckwith, <http://www.smokykin.com/ged/f002/f67/a0026721.htm>

311 **Earl Aethelred**
969
30.

Generation 26

545 **"the Fair" Louis**
344
80.

545 **Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson** (son of Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson) was born in Raumsdal,
345 Telemark, Norway.
92.

545 **Eafa** (son of Eoppa and UNNAMED) was born in 732 AD in Wessex, England. He married
402 **UNNAMED**.
88.

545 **UNNAMED** was born in 736 AD.
402
89.

613 **Carloman** He married **Litwinde**.
438
28.

Ancestors of "James V" James

613 **Litwinde**
438
29.

613 **Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson** (son of Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson) was born in
438 Oppland, Norway. He married **Eysteinsdatter** in Oppland, Norway.
56.

613 **Eysteinsdatter** was born about 785 AD in Trondeim, Norway.
438
57. Notes for Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson:

Ivar "the Great" was Jarl of the Uplands. He was living around 800, but we do not have birth and death dates on him. He is mythirty-third great grandfather.

613 **Rangwald**
438
58.

613 **Egbert** (son of Eahlmund and UNNAMED) was born in 775 AD in Wessex, England. He died
452 on Nov 19, 838 AD in Wessex, England. He married **Redburg**.
80.

613 **Redburg** was born in 788 AD.
452
81. Notes for Egbert:

Egbert was King of Wessex in England from 802 to his death in 839. Offa, the King of Mercia drove him into exile in 789. Egbert lived in Gaul (France) for three years, where he saw the expansion of Charlemagne's empire. After gaining the West Saxon throne, Egbert destroyed the supremacy of Mercia in England. By conquering Cornwall, Kent, Surrey, and Sussex, he enlarged Wessex and made his kingdom supreme. The Mercians, East Anglians, and Northumbrians recognized his rule. His reign foreshadowed the later growth of a united England.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon1.html>

613 **"The Royal Cup Bearer" Oslac**
452
82.

623 **Carloman** He married **Litwinde**.
924
04.

623 **Litwinde**
924
05.

623 **Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson** (son of Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson) was born in
924 Oppland, Norway. He married **Eysteinsdatter** in Oppland, Norway.
32.

623 **Eysteinsdatter** was born about 785 AD in Trondeim, Norway.
924
33. Notes for Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson:

Ancestors of "James V" James

Ivar "the Great" was Jarl of the Uplands. He was living around 800, but we do not have birth and death dates on him. He is my thirty-third great grandfather.

623 **Rangwald**
924
34.

623 **Egbert** (son of Eahlmund and UNNAMED) was born in 775 AD in Wessex, England. He died
938 on Nov 19, 838 AD in Wessex, England. He married **Redburg**.
56.

623 **Redburg** was born in 788 AD.
938
57. Notes for Egbert:

Egbert was King of Wessex in England from 802 to his death in 839. Offa, the King of Mercia drove him into exile in 789. Egbert lived in Gaul (France) for three years, where he saw the expansion of Charlemagne's empire. After gaining the West Saxon throne, Egbert destroyed the supremacy of Mercia in England. By conquering Cornwall, Kent, Surrey, and Sussex, he enlarged Wessex and made his kingdom supreme. The Mercians, East Anglians, and Northumbrians recognized his rule. His reign foreshadowed the later growth of a united England.

Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon1.html>

623 **"The Royal Cup Bearer" Oslac**
938
58.

Generation 27

109 **"Charles the Great" Charlemagne** (son of "Pipin the Short" Pipin and Bertha Bertrada
068 "Bertrada of Laon" De Laon) was born on Apr 02, 742 AD in Ingelheim, Rheinhessen,
960. Hessen-Darmstadt, Prussia. He died in 814 AD in Aachen, Rhineland, Prussia. He married
"Liutgard" Hildegarde.

109 **"Liutgard" Hildegarde**
068
961. Notes for "Charles the Great" Charlemagne:

Charlemagne (called Charles the Great due to his great height) was King of the Franks and Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire.

Charlemagne is the 38th great grandfather of U. S. President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. Roosevelt is the 18th cousin, four times removed to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland.

Charlemagne is the 29th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother through her second marriage, which was to Governor William Bradford. Edward Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed.

Charlemagne is the 34th great grandfather of President John Quincy Adams, my 31st cousin, twice removed. Our ancestors in common are Ragnvald I (died in 890 AD) and his wife, Hild, who were the 28th great grandparents to John Quincy Adams.

In addition, King Charlemagne is the 41st great grandfather of Steven Otis Westmoreland,

Ancestors of "James V" James

the dashing young man who married our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe! This co-mingling of families made our daughter a thirty-fourth cousin, four times removed from her husband prior to their marriage. Another family tie is that Charlemagne shares the same birthday as my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe.

We can learn about Charlemagne easily from public domain information on the Internet. Here is a sample:

"He was six feet four inches tall, and built to scale. He had beautiful white hair, animated eyes, a powerful nose... a presence' always stately and dignified.' He was temperate in eating and drinking, abominated drunkenness, and kept in good health despite every exposure and hardship." This quote is from Eginhardt (the King's secretary) describing Charlemagne

Charlemagne (Charles the Great) was born on April 2, 742 in Northern Europe. "By the sword and the cross," he became master of Western Europe. Through his enlightened leadership the roots of learning and order were restored to Medieval Europe.

In 768, when Charlemagne was 26, he and his brother Carloman inherited the kingdom of the Franks. In 771 Carloman died, and Charlemagne became sole ruler of the kingdom. At that time the Franks were falling back into barbarian ways, neglecting their education and religion. The Saxons of northern Europe were still pagans. In the south, the Roman Catholic church was asserting its power to recover land confiscated by the Lombard kingdom of Italy. Europe was in turmoil.

Charlemagne was determined to strengthen his realm and to bring order to Europe. In 772 he launched a 30-year military campaign to accomplish this objective. By 800 Charlemagne was the undisputed ruler of Western Europe. His vast realm encompassed what are now France, Switzerland, Belgium, and The Netherlands. It included half of present-day Italy and Germany, and parts of Austria and Spain. By establishing a central government over Western Europe, Charlemagne restored much of the unity of the old Roman Empire and paved the way for the development of modern Europe.

On Christmas Day in 800, while Charlemagne knelt in prayer in SaintPeter's in Rome, Pope Leo III placed a golden crown on the bowed head of the king. Charlemagne is said to have been surprised by the coronation, declaring that he would not have come into the church had he known the pope's plan. However, some historians say the pope would not have dared to act without Charlemagne's knowledge.

Charlemagne learned to read Latin and some Greek, but apparently did not master writing. At meals, instead of having jesters perform, he listened to visiting scholars read from learned works. Charlemagne believed that government should be for the benefit of the governed. He was a tireless reformer who tried to improve his people's lives. He set up money standards to encourage commerce, urged better farming methods and worked to spread education and Christianity.

I give thanks for the description above provided through the web site at www.lucidcafe.com/library/96apr/charlemagne.html.

Another more detailed telling of the life and effects of KingCharlemagne:

Durant, Will. "King Charlemagne", History of Civilization Vol III, TheAge of Faith. Electronic version in the Knighthood, Tournaments &Chivalry Resource Library, Ed. Brian R. Price.

<http://www.chronique.com/Library/MedHistory/charlemagne.htm>

109 **Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson** (son of Heiti Gorsson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark,
069 Norway.
184.

Ancestors of "James V" James

109 **Eoppa** (son of Ingild and UNNAMED) was born in 706 AD in Wessex, England. He married
080 **UNNAMED**.
576.

109 **UNNAMED** was born in 710 AD.
080
577.

122 **"the German" Louis** He married **Emma**.
687
656.

122 **Emma**
687
657.

122 **Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson** (son of Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson) was
687 born about 750 AD in Norway.
712.

122 **Eahlmund** (son of Eafa and UNNAMED) was born in 758 AD in Wessex, England. He died
690 in 788 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
560.

122 **UNNAMED** was born in 762 AD.
690
561.

124 **"the German" Louis** He married **Emma**.
784
808.

124 **Emma**
784
809.

124 **Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson** (son of Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson) was
784 born about 750 AD in Norway.
864.

124 **Eahlmund** (son of Eafa and UNNAMED) was born in 758 AD in Wessex, England. He died
787 in 788 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
712.

124 **UNNAMED** was born in 762 AD.
787
713.

Generation 28

218 **"Pipin the Short" Pipin** (son of Charles "The Hammer" Martel and "Rotrude of Treves"
137 Rotrude) was born in 714 AD in Ingelheim, Rheinhessen, Hessen-Darmstadt, Prussia. He
920. died on Sep 24, 768 AD in Sst. Denis, Paris, Seine, France. He married **Bertha Bertrada**
"Bertrada of Laon" De Laon about 740 AD in Laon, Aisne, France.

Ancestors of "James V" James

218 **Bertha Bertrada "Bertrada of Laon" De Laon** was born in 720 AD in Laon, France. She
137 died on Jul 12, 783 AD in Aachen, Austrasia.
921.

218 **Heiti Gorsson** (son of Gor "Sea King" Thorrasson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark,
138 Norway.
368.

218 **Ingild** (son of Cenred and UNNAMED) was born in 680 AD in Wessex, England. He died in
161 718 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
152.

218 **UNNAMED** was born in 684 AD.
161
153. Notes for Ingild:

Ingild did not rule.

245 **"the Fair" Louis**
375
312.

245 **Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson** (son of Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson) was born in Raumsdal,
375 Telemark, Norway.
424.

245 **Eafa** (son of Eoppa and UNNAMED) was born in 732 AD in Wessex, England. He married
381 **UNNAMED**.
120.

245 **UNNAMED** was born in 736 AD.
381
121.

249 **"the Fair" Louis**
569
616.

249 **Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson** (son of Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson) was born in Raumsdal,
569 Telemark, Norway.
728.

249 **Eafa** (son of Eoppa and UNNAMED) was born in 732 AD in Wessex, England. He married
575 **UNNAMED**.
424.

249 **UNNAMED** was born in 736 AD.
575
425.

Generation 29

436 **Charles "The Hammer" Martel** (son of "Pepin II of Herista" Pipin and Alpaide Chalpaide)
275 was born on Aug 23, 686 AD in Austrasia, France. He died on Oct 22, 741 AD in Quierzy,
840 Austrasia. He married **"Rotrude of Treves" Rotrude**.

Ancestors of "James V" James

436 "Rotrude of Treves" Rotrude was born in 690 AD in 724.

275

841. Notes for Charles "The Hammer" Martel:

Charles 'the Hammer' Martel (August 23, 686 ? October 22, 741) is the 45th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, children of my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe, and her husband, Steven O. Westmoreland, through whom the Martel line comes.

"He was proclaimed Mayor of the Palace and ruled the Franks in the name of a titular King. Late in his reign he proclaimed himself Duke of the Franks (the last four years of his reign he did not even bother with the façade of a King) and by any name was de facto ruler of the Frankish Realms. In 739 he was offered an office of Roman consul by the Pope, which he rejected^[1] possibly not to conflict with Theodatus Ursus who already occupied the office by appointment of the Byzantine emperor Leo III the Isaurian. He expanded his rule over all three of the Frankish kingdoms: Austrasia, Neustria and Burgundy. Martel was born in Herstal, in present-day Belgium, the illegitimate son of Pippin the Middle and his concubine Alpaïda (or Chalpaïda).^[2] He was described by Louis Gustave and Charles Strauss in their book "Moslem and Frank; or, Charles Martel and the rescue of Europe" as a tall, powerfully built man, who was more agile than his size would lead one to believe.

"He is best remembered for winning the Battle of Tours in 732, which has traditionally been characterized as an event that halted the Islamic expansionism in Europe that had conquered Iberia.^[3]" Charles's victory has often been regarded as decisive for world history, since it preserved western Europe from Muslim conquest and Islamization."^[4]

"In addition to being the leader of the army that prevailed at Tours, Charles Martel was a truly giant figure of the Middle Ages. A brilliant general, he is considered the forefather of western heavy cavalry, chivalry, founder of the Carolingian Empire (which was named after him), and a catalyst for the feudal system, which would see Europe through the Middle Ages. Although some recent scholars have suggested he was more of a beneficiary of the feudal system than an knowing agent for social change, others continue to see him as the primary catalyst for the feudal system.^[5]

"The following tale is told of Charles, and the origins of his name: in 686, Pippin II and his wife Plectrude were talking together in a room when they were intruded upon by a messenger, bringing news that the Mayor's mistress, Alpaïda, had given birth to a son at Herstal. The messenger, fearful of arousing the wrath of Plectrude, decided not to announce the news directly. Instead, he said: "Long live the king, it is a carl" ('man'). Pippin, equally cautious of his wife, dismissed the messenger as follows: "A carl, is it? Then let him be called that." This was done, and, so legend claims, the child was named "Carl". Alpaïda also bore Pippin another son, Childebrand.

"In December 714, Pippin the Middle (Pippin II) died. Prior to his death, he had, at his wife Plectrude's urging, designated Theudoald, his grandson by their son Grimoald, his heir in the entire realm. This was immediately opposed by the nobles because Theudoald was a child of only eight years of age. To prevent Charles using this unrest to his own advantage, Plectrude had him gaoled (jailed) in Cologne, the city which was destined to be her capital. This prevented an uprising on his behalf in Austrasia, but not in Neustria.

"In 715, the Neustrian nobles proclaimed Ragenfrid mayor of their palace on behalf of, and apparently with the support of, Dagobert III, the young king, who in theory had the legal authority to select a mayor, though by this time the Merovingian dynasty had lost most such powers.

"The Austrasians were not to be left supporting a woman and her young son for long. Before the end of the year, Charles Martel had escaped from prison and been acclaimed mayor by the nobles of that kingdom. The Neustrians had been attacking Austrasia and the nobles were waiting for a strong man to lead them against their invading countrymen. That

Ancestors of "James V" James

year, Dagobert died and the Neustrians proclaimed Chilperic II king without the support of the rest of the Frankish people.

"In 716, Chilperic and Ragenfrid together led an army into Austrasia. The Neustrians allied with another invading force under Radbod, King of the Frisians and met Charles in battle near Cologne, which was still held by Plectrude. Charles had little time to gather men, or prepare, and the result was his only defeat. According to Strauss and Gustave, Martel fought a brilliant battle, but realized he could not prevail because he was outnumbered so badly, and retreated. In fact, he fled the field as soon as he realized he did not have the time or the men to prevail, retreating to the mountains of the Eifel to gather men, and train them. The king and his mayor then turned to besiege their other rival in the city and took it and the treasury, and received the recognition of both Chilperic as king and Ragenfrid as mayor. Plectrude surrendered on Theudoald's behalf.

Magnanimous in victory

"At this juncture, however, events turned in favour of Charles. Having made the proper preparations, he fell upon the triumphant army near Malmedy as it was returning to its own province, and, in the ensuing Battle of Amblève, routed it and it fled. Several things were notable about this battle, in which Charles set the pattern for the remainder of his military career: First, he appeared where his enemies least expected him, while they were marching triumphantly home and far outnumbered him. He also attacked when least expected, at midday, when armies of that era traditionally were resting. Finally, he attacked them how they least expected it, by feigning a retreat to draw his opponents into a trap. The feigned retreat, next to unknown in Western Europe at that time? it was a traditionally eastern tactic? required both extraordinary discipline on the part of the troops and exact timing on the part of their commander. Charles, in this battle, had begun demonstrating the military genius that would mark his rule, in that he never attacked his enemies where, when, or how they expected, and the result was an unbroken victory streak that lasted until his death.

"In Spring 717, Charles returned to Neustria with an army and confirmed his supremacy with a victory at the Battle of Vincy, near Cambrai. He chased the fleeing king and mayor to Paris, before turning back to deal with Plectrude and Cologne. He took her city and dispersed her adherents. However, he allowed both Plectrude and the young Theudoald to live and treated them with kindness? unusual for those Dark Ages, when mercy to a former jailer, or a potential rival, was rare. On this success, he proclaimed Clotaire IV king of Austrasia in opposition to Chilperic and deposed the archbishop of Rheims, Rigobert, replacing him with Milo, a lifelong supporter.

Consolidation of power

"After subjugating all Austrasia, he marched against Radbod and pushed him back into his territory, even forcing the concession of West Frisia (later Holland). He also sent the Saxons back over the Weser and thus secured his borders? in the name of the new king Clotaire, of course. In 718, Chilperic responded to Charles' new ascendancy by making an alliance with Odo the Great (or Eudes, as he is sometimes known), the duke of Aquitaine, who had made himself independent during the civil war in 715, but was again defeated, at the Battle of Soissons, by Charles. The king fled with his ducal ally to the land south of the Loire and Ragenfrid fled to Angers. Soon Clotaire IV died and Odo gave up on Chilperic and, in exchange for recognising his dukedom, surrendered the king to Charles, who recognised his kingship over all the Franks in return for legitimate royal affirmation of his mayoralty, likewise over all the kingdoms (718).

Foreign wars from 718-732

"The ensuing years were full of strife. Between 718 and 723, Charles secured his power through a series of victories: he won the loyalty of several important bishops and abbots (by donating lands and money for the foundation of abbeys such as Echternach), he subjugated Bavaria and Alemannia, and he defeated the pagan Saxons.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"Having unified the Franks under his banner, Charles was determined to punish the Saxons who had invaded Austrasia. Therefore, late in 718, he laid waste their country to the banks of the Weser, the Lippe, and the Ruhr. He defeated them in the Teutoburg Forest. In 719, Charles seized West Frisia without any great resistance on the part of the Frisians, who had been subjects of the Franks but had seized control upon the death of Pippin. Although Charles did not trust the pagans, their ruler, Aldegisel, accepted Christianity, and Charles sent Willibrord, bishop of Utrecht, the famous 'Apostle to the Frisians' to convert the people. Charles also did much to support Winfrid, later Saint Boniface, the "Apostle of the Germans."

"When Chilperic II died the following year (720), Charles appointed as his successor the son of Dagobert III, Theuderic IV, who was still a minor, and who occupied the throne from 720 to 737. Charles was now appointing the kings whom he supposedly served, *rois fainÉants* who were mere puppets in his hands; by the end of his reign they were so useless that he didn't even bother appointing one. At this time, Charles again marched against the Saxons. Then the Neustrians rebelled under Ragenfrid, who had been left the county of Anjou. They were easily defeated (724), but Ragenfrid gave up his sons as hostages in return for keeping his county. This ended the civil wars of Charles's reign.

"The next six years were devoted in their entirety to assuring Frankish authority over the dependent Germanic tribes. Between 720 and 723, Charles was fighting in Bavaria, where the Agilolfing dukes had gradually evolved into independent rulers, recently in alliance with Liutprand the Lombard. He forced the Alemanni to accompany him, and Duke Hugbert submitted to Frankish suzerainty. In 725 and 728, he again entered Bavaria and the ties of lordship seemed strong. From his first campaign, he brought back the Agilolfing princess Swanachild, who apparently became his concubine. In 730, he marched against Lantfrid, duke of Alemannia, who had also become independent, and killed him in battle. He forced the Alemanni capitulation to Frankish suzerainty and did not appoint a successor to Lantfrid. Thus, southern Germany once more became part of the Frankish kingdom, as had northern Germany during the first years of the reign.

"By 730, his own realm secure, Charles began to prepare exclusively for the coming storm from the south and west.

"In 721, the emir of Córdoba had built up a strong army from Morocco, Yemen, and Syria to conquer Aquitaine, the large duchy in the southwest of Gaul, nominally under Frankish sovereignty, but in practice almost independent in the hands of the Odo the Great, the Duke of Aquitaine, since the Merovingian kings had lost power. The invading Muslims besieged the city of Toulouse, then Aquitaine's most important city, and Odo (also called Eudes, or Eudo) immediately left to find help. He returned three months later just before the city was about to surrender and defeated the Muslim invaders on June 9, 721, at what is now known as the Battle of Toulouse. This critical defeat was essentially the result of a classic enveloping movement by Odo's forces. (After Odo originally fled, the Muslims became overconfident and, instead of maintaining strong outer defenses around their siege camp and continuous scouting, they did neither.) Thus, when Odo returned, he was able to launch a near complete surprise attack on the besieging force, scattering it at the first attack, and slaughtering units caught resting or that fled without weapons or armour.

"Due to the situation in Iberia, Martel believed he needed a virtually full-time army -- one he could train intensely -- as a core of veteran Franks who would be augmented with the usual conscripts called up in time of war. (During the Early Middle Ages, troops were only available after the crops had been planted and before harvesting time.) To train the kind of infantry that could withstand the Muslim heavy cavalry, Charles needed them year-round, and he needed to pay them so their families could buy the food they would have otherwise grown. To obtain money he seized church lands and property, and used the funds to pay his soldiers. The same Charles who had secured the support of the ecclesia by donating land, seized some of it back between 724 and 732. Of course, Church officials were enraged, and, for a time, it looked as though Charles might even be excommunicated for his actions. But then came a significant invasion.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Eve of Tours

"Historian Paul K. Davis said in 100 Decisive Battles Having defeated Eudes, he turned to the Rhine to strengthen his northeastern borders -but in 725 was diverted south with the activity of the Muslims in Aquitaine.' Martel then concentrated his attention to the Umayyads, virtually for the remainder of his life.[6] Indeed, 12 years later, when he had thrice rescued Gaul from Umayyad invasions, Antonio Santosuosso noted when he destroyed an Umayyad army sent to reinforce the invasion forces of the 735 campaigns, "Charles Martel again came to the rescue".[7] It has been noted that Charles Martel could have pursued the wars against the Saxons?but he was determined to prepare for what he thought was a greater danger.

"It is also vital to note that the Muslims were not aware, at that time, of the true strength of the Franks, or the fact that they were building a real army instead of the typical barbarian hordes that had infested Europe after Rome's fall. They considered the Germanic tribes, including the Franks, simply barbarians and were not particularly concerned about them. The Arab Chronicles, the history of that age, show that Arab awareness of the Franks as a growing military power came only after the Battle of Tours when the Caliph expressed shock at his army's catastrophic defeat.

Battle of Tours

Main article Battle of Tours.

Leadup and importance

"It was under one of their ablest and most renowned commanders, with a veteran army, and with every apparent advantage of time, place, and circumstance, that the Arabs made their great effort at the conquest of Europe north of the Pyrenees."[8]

Edward Shepherd Creasy, The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World

"The Cordoban emirate had previously invaded Gaul and had been stopped in its northward sweep at the Battle of Toulouse, in 721. The hero of that less celebrated event had been Odo the Great, Duke of Aquitaine, who was not the progenitor of a race of kings and patron of chroniclers. It has previously been explained how Odo defeated the invading Muslims, but when they returned, things were far different. The arrival in the interim of a new emir of Cordoba, Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, who brought with him a huge force of Arabs and Berber horsemen, triggered a far greater invasion. Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi had been at Toulouse, and the Arab Chronicles make clear he had strongly opposed the Emir's decision not to secure outer defenses against a relief force, which allowed Odo and his relief force to attack with impunity before the Islamic cavalry could assemble or mount. Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi had no intention of permitting such a disaster again. This time the Umayyad horsemen were ready for battle, and the results were horrific for the Aquitanians. Odo, hero of Toulouse, was badly defeated in the Muslim invasion of 732 at the battle prior to the Muslim sacking of Bordeaux, and when he gathered a second army, at the Battle of the River Garonne?where the western chroniclers state, "God alone knows the number of the slain"? and the city of Bordeaux was sacked and looted. Odo fled to Charles, seeking help. Charles agreed to come to Odo's rescue, provided Odo acknowledged Charles and his house as his Overlords, which Odo did formally at once. Thus, Odo faded into history while Charles marched into it. It is interesting to note that Charles was pragmatic; while most commanders would never use their enemies in battle, Odo and his remaining Aquitanian nobles formed the right flank of Charles' forces at Tours.

"The Battle of Tours earned Charles the cognomen "Martel" ('Hammer'), for the merciless way he hammered his enemies. Many historians, including the great military historian Sir Edward Creasy, believe that had he failed at Tours, Islam would probably have overrun Gaul, and perhaps the remainder of western Christian Europe. Gibbon made clear his belief

Ancestors of "James V" James

that the Umayyad armies would have conquered from Rome to the Rhine, and even England, having the English Channel for protection, with ease, had Martel not prevailed. Creasy said "the great victory won by Charles Martel ... gave a decisive check to the career of Arab conquest in Western Europe, rescued Christendom from Islam, [and] preserved the relics of ancient and the germs of modern civilization." Gibbon's belief that the fate of Christianity hinged on this battle is echoed by other historians including John B. Bury, and was very popular for most of modern historiography. It fell somewhat out of style in the twentieth century, when historians such as Bernard Lewis contended that Arabs had little intention of occupying northern France. More recently, however, many historians have tended once again to view the Battle of Tours as a very significant event in the history of Europe and Christianity. Equally, many, such as William Watson, still believe this battle was one of macrohistorical world-changing importance, if they do not go so far as Gibbon does rhetorically.

"In the modern era, Matthew Bennett and his co-authors of "Fighting Techniques of the Medieval World", published in 2005, argue that "few battles are remembered 1,000 years after they are fought...but the Battle of Poitiers, (Tours) is an exception...Charles Martel turned back a Muslim raid that had it been allowed to continue, might have conquered Gaul." Michael Grant, author of "History of Rome", grants the Battle of Tours such importance that he lists it in the macrohistorical dates of the Roman era.

"It is important to note however that modern western historians, military historians, and writers, essentially fall into three camps. The first, those who believe Gibbon was right in his assessment that Martel saved Christianity and western civilization by this Battle are typified by Bennett, Paul Davis, Robert Martin, and educationalist Dexter B. Wakefield who writes in An Islamic Europe:

A Muslim France? Historically, it nearly happened. But as a result of Martel's fierce opposition, which ended Muslim advances and set the stage for centuries of war thereafter, Islam moved no farther into Europe. European school children learn about the Battle of Tours in much the same way that American students learn about Valley Forge and Gettysburg."^[9] ?

"The second camp of contemporary historians believe that a failure by Martel at Tours could have been a disaster, destroying what would become western civilization after the Renaissance. Certainly all historians agree that no power would have remained in Europe able to halt Islamic expansion had the Franks failed. William E. Watson, one of the most respected historians of this era, strongly supports Tours as a macrohistorical event, but distances himself from the rhetoric of Gibbon and Drubeck, writing, for example, of the battle's importance in Frankish, and world, history in 1993:

? There is clearly some justification for ranking Tours-Poitiers among the most significant events in Frankish history when one considers the result of the battle in light of the remarkable record of the successful establishment by Muslims of Islamic political and cultural dominance along the entire eastern and southern rim of the former Christian, Roman world. The rapid Muslim conquest of Palestine, Syria, Egypt and the North African coast all the way to Morocco in the seventh century resulted in the permanent imposition by force of Islamic culture onto a previously Christian and largely non-Arab base. The Visigothic kingdom fell to Muslim conquerors in a single battle on the Rio Barbate in 711, and the Hispanic Christian population took seven long centuries to regain control of the Iberian Peninsula. The Reconquista, of course, was completed in 1492, only months before Columbus received official backing for his fateful voyage across the Atlantic Ocean. Had Charles Martel suffered at Tours-Poitiers the fate of King Roderick at the Rio Barbate, it is doubtful that a "do-nothing" sovereign of the Merovingian realm could have later succeeded where his talented major domus had failed. Indeed, as Charles was the progenitor of the Carolingian line of Frankish rulers and grandfather of Charlemagne, one can even say with a degree of certainty that the subsequent history of the West would have proceeded along vastly different currents had ? Abd ar-Rahman been victorious at Tours-Poitiers in 732.^[10] ?

Ancestors of "James V" James

"The final camp of western historians believe that Tours was vastly overrated. This view is typified by Alessandro Barbero, who writes, "Today, historians tend to play down the significance of the battle of Poitiers, pointing out that the purpose of the Arab force defeated by Charles Martel was not to conquer the Frankish kingdom, but simply to pillage the wealthy monastery of St-Martin of Tours".[11] Similarly, Thomas Mastnak writes:

Modern historians have constructed a myth presenting this victory as having saved Christian Europe from the Muslims. Edward Gibbon, for example, called Charles Martel the savior of Christendom and the battle near Poitiers an encounter that changed the history of the world... This myth has survived well into our own times... Contemporaries of the battle, however, did not overstate its significance. The continuators of Fredegar's chronicle, who probably wrote in the mid-eighth century, pictured the battle as just one of many military encounters between Christians and Saracens - moreover, as only one in a series of wars fought by Frankish princes for booty and territory... One of Fredegar's continuators presented the battle of Poitiers as what it really was: an episode in the struggle between Christian princes as the Carolingians strove to bring Aquitaine under their rule.[12]

However, it is vital to note, when assessing Charles Martel's life, that even those historians who dispute the significance of this one battle as the event that saved Christianity, do not dispute that Martel himself had a huge effect on western history. Modern military historian Victor Davis Hanson acknowledges the debate on this battle, citing historians both for and against its macrohistorical placement:

Recent scholars have suggested Poitiers, so poorly recorded in contemporary sources, was a mere raid and thus a construct of western mythmaking or that a Muslim victory might have been preferable to continued Frankish dominance. What is clear is that Poitiers marked a general continuance of the successful defense of Europe, (from the Muslims). Flush from the victory at Tours, Charles Martel went on to clear southern France from Islamic attackers for decades, unify the warring kingdoms into the foundations of the Carolingian Empire, and ensure ready and reliable troops from local estates".[13]

Battle

"The Battle of Tours probably took place somewhere between Tours and Poitiers (hence its other name: Battle of Poitiers). The Frankish army, under Charles Martel, consisted mostly of veteran infantry, somewhere between 15,000 and 75,000 men. While Charles had some cavalry, they did not have stirrups, so he had them dismount and reinforce his phalanx. Odo and his Aquitanian nobility were also normally cavalry, but they also dismounted at the battle's onset, to buttress the phalanx. Responding to the Umayyad invasion, the Franks had avoided the old Roman roads, hoping to take the invaders by surprise. Martel believed it was absolutely essential that he not only take the Umayyads by surprise, but that he be allowed to select the ground on which the battle would be fought, ideally a high, wooded plain where the Islamic horsemen, already tired from carrying armour, would be further exhausted charging uphill. Further, the woods would aid the Franks in their defensive square by partially impeding the ability of the Umayyad horsemen to make a clear charge.

"From the Muslim accounts of the battle, they were indeed taken by surprise to find a large force opposing their expected sack of Tours, and they waited for six days, scouting the enemy and summoning all their raiding parties so their full strength was present for the battle. Emir Abdul Rahman was an able general who did not like the unknown at all, and he did not like charging uphill against an unknown number of foes who seemed well-disciplined and well-disposed for battle. But the weather was also a factor. The Germanic Franks, in their wolf and bear pelts, were more used to the cold, better dressed for it, and despite not having tents, which the Muslims did, were prepared to wait as long as needed, the autumn only growing colder.

"On the seventh day, the Umayyad army, mostly Berber and Arab horsemen and led by

Ancestors of "James V" James

Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, attacked. During the battle, the Franks defeated the Islamic army and the emir was killed. While Western accounts are sketchy, Arab accounts are fairly detailed in describing how the Franks formed a large square and fought a brilliant defensive battle. Rahman had doubts before the battle that his men were ready for such a struggle, and should have had them abandon the loot which hindered them, but instead decided to trust his horsemen, who had never failed him. Indeed, it was thought impossible for infantry of that age to withstand armoured cavalry.

"Martel managed to inspire his men to stand firm against a force which must have seemed invincible to them, huge mailed horsemen, who, in addition, probably vastly outnumbered the Franks. In one of the rare instances where medieval infantry stood up against cavalry charges, the disciplined Frankish soldiers withstood the assaults even though, according to Arab sources, the Umayyad cavalry several times broke into the interior of the Frankish square. The scene is described in Bishop Isidore of Beja's Chronicle (translated passage from Fordham University's Internet Medieval Source Book):

"And in the shock of the battle the men of the North seemed like a sea that cannot be moved. Firmly they stood, one close to another, forming as it were a bulwark of ice; and with great blows of their swords they hewed down the Arabs. Drawn up in a band around their chief, the people of the Austrasians carried all before them. Their tireless hands drove their swords down to the breasts of the foe."

"Both accounts agree that the Umayyad forces had broken into the square and were trying to kill Martel, whose liege men had surrounded him and would not be broken, when a trick Charles had planned before the battle bore fruit beyond his wildest dreams. Both Western and Muslim accounts of the battle agree that sometime during the height of the fighting, with the battle still in grave doubt, scouts sent by Martel to the Muslim camp began freeing prisoners. Fearing loss of their plunder, a large portion of the Muslim army abandoned the battle and returned to camp to protect their spoils. In attempting to stop what appeared to be a retreat, Abdul Rahman was surrounded and killed by the Franks, and what started as a ruse ended up a real retreat, as the Umayyad army fled the field that day. The Franks resumed their phalanx, and rested in place through the night, believing the battle would resume at dawn of the following morning.

"The next day, when the Umayyad army did not renew the battle, the Franks feared an ambush. Charles at first believed the Muslims were attempting to lure him down the hill and into the open, a tactic he would resist at all costs. Only after extensive reconnaissance by Frankish soldiers of the Umayyad camp—which by both accounts had been so hastily abandoned that even the tents remained, as the Umayyad forces headed back to Iberia with what spoils remained that they could carry—was it discovered that the Muslims had retreated during the night. As the Arab Chronicles would later reveal, the generals from the different parts of the Caliphate, Berbers, Arabs, Persians and many more, had been unable to agree on a leader to take Abd er Rahman's place as Emir, or even to agree on a commander to lead them the following day. Only the Emir, Abd er Rahman, had a Fatwa from the Caliph, and thus absolute authority over the faithful under arms. With his death, and with the varied nationalities and ethnicities present in an army drawn from all over the Caliphate, politics, racial and ethnic bias, and personalities reared their head. The inability of the bickering generals to select anyone to lead resulted in the wholesale withdrawal of an army that might have been able to resume the battle and defeat the Franks.

"Martel's ability to have Abd er Rahman killed through a clever ruse he had carefully planned to cause confusion, at the battle's apex, and his years spent rigorously training his men, combined to do what was thought impossible: Martel's Franks, virtually all heavy infantry, withstood both mailed heavy cavalry with 20 foot lances, and bow-wielding light cavalry, without the aid of bows or firearms.[4] This was a feat of war almost unheard of in medieval history, a feat which even the heavily armored Roman legions proved themselves incapable of against the Parthians,[14] and left Martel a unique place in history as the savior of Europe[15] and a brilliant general in an age not known for its generalship.

Ancestors of "James V" James

After Tours

"In the subsequent decade, Charles led the Frankish army against the eastern duchies, Bavaria and Alemannia, and the southern duchies, Aquitaine and Provence. He dealt with the ongoing conflict with the Frisians and Saxons to his northeast with some success, but full conquest of the Saxons and their incorporation into the Frankish empire would wait for his grandson Charlemagne, primarily because Martel concentrated the bulk of his efforts against Muslim expansion.

"So instead of concentrating on conquest to his east, he continued expanding Frankish authority in the west, and denying the Emirate of Córdoba a foothold in Europe beyond Al-Andalus. After his victory at Tours, Martel continued on in campaigns in 736 and 737 to drive other Muslim armies from bases in Gaul after they again attempted to get a foothold in Europe beyond Al-Andalus.

Wars from 732-737

"Between his victory of 732 and 735, Charles reorganized the kingdom of Burgundy, replacing the counts and dukes with his loyal supporters, thus strengthening his hold on power. He was forced, by the ventures of Radbod, duke of the Frisians (719-734), son of the Duke Aldegisel who had accepted the missionaries Willibrord and Boniface, to invade independence-minded Frisia again in 734. In that year, he slew the duke, who had expelled the Christian missionaries, in the battle of the Boarn and so wholly subjugated the populace (he destroyed every pagan shrine) that the people were peaceful for twenty years after.

"The dynamic changed in 735 because of the death of Odo the Great, who had been forced to acknowledge, albeit reservedly, the suzerainty of Charles in 719. Though Charles wished to unite the duchy directly to himself and went there to elicit the proper homage of the Aquitanians, the nobility proclaimed Odo's son, Hunold, whose dukedom Charles recognised when the Umayyads invaded Provence the next year, and who equally was forced to acknowledge Charles as overlord as he had no hope of holding off the Muslims alone.

"This naval Arab invasion was headed by Abdul Rahman's son. It landed in Narbonne in 736 and moved at once to reinforce Arles and move inland. Charles temporarily put the conflict with Hunold on hold, and descended on the Provençal strongholds of the Umayyads. In 736, he took Montfrin and Avignon, and Arles and Aix-en-Provence with the help of Liutprand, King of the Lombards. Nîmes, Agde, and Béziers, held by Islam since 725, fell to him and their fortresses were destroyed. He crushed one Umayyad army at Arles, as that force sallied out of the city, and then took the city itself by a direct and brutal frontal attack, and burned it to the ground to prevent its use again as a stronghold for Umayyad expansion. He then moved swiftly and defeated a mighty host outside of Narbonne at the River Berre, but failed to take the city. Military historians believe he could have taken it, had he chosen to tie up all his resources to do so? but he believed his life was coming to a close, and he had much work to do to prepare for his sons to take control of the Frankish realm. A direct frontal assault, such as took Arles, using rope ladders and rams, plus a few catapults, simply was not sufficient to take Narbonne without horrific loss of life for the Franks, troops Martel felt he could not lose. Nor could he spare years to starve the city into submission, years he needed to set up the administration of an empire his heirs would reign over. He left Narbonne therefore, isolated and surrounded, and his son would return to liberate it for Christianity. Provence, however, he successfully rid of its foreign occupiers, and crushed all foreign armies able to advance Islam further.

"Notable about these campaigns was Charles' incorporation, for the first time, of heavy cavalry with stirrups to augment his phalanx. His ability to coordinate infantry and cavalry veterans was unequalled in that era and enabled him to face superior numbers of invaders, and to decisively defeat them again and again. Some historians believe the Battle against the main Muslim force at the River Berre, near Narbonne, in particular was as important a

Ancestors of "James V" James

victory for Christian Europe as Tours. In *Barbarians, Marauders, and Infidels*, Antonio Santosuosso, Professor Emeritus of History at the University of Western Ontario, and considered an expert historian in the era indispute, puts forth an interesting modern opinion on Martel, Tours, and the subsequent campaigns against Rahman's son in 736-737. Santosuosso presents a compelling case that these later defeats of invading Muslim armies were at least as important as Tours in their defence of Western Christendom and the preservation of Western monasticism, the monasteries of which were the centers of learning which ultimately led Europe out of her Middle Ages. He also makes a compelling argument, after studying the Arab histories of the period, that these were clearly armies of invasion, sent by the Caliph not just to avenge Tours, but to begin the conquest of Christian Europe and bring it into the Caliphate.

"Further, unlike his father at Tours, Rahman's son in 736-737 knew that the Franks were a real power, and that Martel personally was a force to be reckoned with. He had no intention of allowing Martel to catch him unawares and dictate the time and place of battle, as his father had, and concentrated instead on seizing a substantial portion of the coastal plains around Narbonne in 736 and heavily reinforced Arles as he advanced inland. They planned from there to move from city to city, fortifying as they went, and if Martel wished to stop them from making a permanent enclave for expansion of the Caliphate, he would have to come to them, in the open, where, he, unlike his father, would dictate the place of battle. All worked as he had planned, until Martel arrived, albeit more swiftly than the Moors believed he could call up his entire army. Unfortunately for Rahman's son, however, he had overestimated the time it would take Martel to develop heavy cavalry equal to that of the Muslims. The Caliphate believed it would take a generation, but Martel managed it in five short years. Prepared to face the Frankish phalanx, the Muslims were totally unprepared to face a mixed force of heavy cavalry and infantry in a phalanx. Thus, Charles again championed Christianity and halted Muslim expansion into Europe, as the window was closing on Islamic ability to do so. These defeats, plus those at the hands of Leo in Anatolia were the last great attempt at expansion by the Umayyad Caliphate before the destruction of the dynasty at the Battle of the Zab, and the ending of the Caliphate forever, especially the utter destruction of the Umayyad army at River Berre near Narbonne in 737.

Interregnum

"In 737, at the tail end of his campaigning in Provence and Septimania, the king, Theuderic IV, died. Martel, titling himself *maior domus* and *princeps et dux Francorum*, did not appoint a new king and nobody acclaimed one. The throne lay vacant until Martel's death. As the historian Charles Oman says (*The Dark Ages*, pg 297), "he cared not for name or style so long as the real power was in his hands."

"Gibbon has said Martel was "content with the titles of Mayor or Duke of the Franks, but he deserved to become the father of a line of kings," which he did. Gibbon also says of him, "in the public danger, he was summoned by the voice of his country."

"The interregnum, the final four years of Charles' life, was more peaceful than most of it had been and much of his time was now spent on administrative and organisational plans to create a more efficient state. Though, in 738, he compelled the Saxons of Westphalia to do him homage and pay tribute, and in 739 checked an uprising in Provence, the rebels being under the leadership of Maurontus. Charles set about integrating the outlying realms of his empire into the Frankish church. He erected four dioceses in Bavaria (Salzburg, Regensburg, Freising, and Passau) and gave them Boniface as archbishop and metropolitan over all Germany east of the Rhine, with his seat at Mainz. Boniface had been under his protection from 723 on; indeed the saint himself explained to his old friend, Daniel of Winchester, that without it he could neither administer his church, defend his clergy, nor prevent idolatry. It was Boniface who had defended Charles most stoutly for his deeds in seizing ecclesiastical lands to pay his army in the days leading to Tours, as one doing what he must to defend Christianity. In 739, Pope Gregory III begged Charles for his aid against Liutprand, but Charles was loathe to fight his onetime ally and ignored the Papal plea. Nonetheless, the Papal applications for Frankish protection showed how far Martel had

Ancestors of "James V" James

come from the days he was tottering on excommunication, and set the stage for his son and grandson literally to rearrange Italy to suit the Papacy, and protect it.

Death

Tomb of Charles Martel, Basilique Saint-Denis.

"Charles Martel died on October 22, 741, at Quierzy-sur-Oise in what is today the Aisne d'Épartement in the Picardy region of France. He was buried at Saint Denis Basilica in Paris. His territories were divided among his adult sons a year earlier: to Carloman he gave Austrasia and Alemannia (with Bavaria as a vassal), to Pippin the Younger Neustria and Burgundy (with Aquitaine as a vassal), and to Grifo nothing, though some sources indicate he intended to give him a strip of land between Neustria and Austrasia.

"Gibbon called him "the hero of the age" and declared "Christendom ... delivered ... by the genius and good fortune of one man, Charles Martel." A strong argument can be made that Gibbon was correct on both counts.

Legacy

"At the beginning of Charles Martel's career, he had many internal opponents and felt the need to appoint his own kingly claimant, Clotaire IV. By his end, however, the dynamics of rulership in Francia had changed, no hallowed Merovingian was needed, neither for defence nor legitimacy: Charles divided his realm between his sons without opposition (though he ignored his young son Bernard). In between, he strengthened the Frankish state by consistently defeating, through superior generalship, the host of hostile foreign nations which beset it on all sides, including the heathen Saxons, which his grandson Charlemagne would fully subdue, and Moors, which he halted on a path of continental domination.

"Though he never cared about titles, his son Pippin did, and finally asked the Pope "who should be King, he who has the title, or he who has the power?" The Pope, highly dependent on Frankish armies for his independence from Lombard and Byzantine power (the Byzantine emperor still considered himself to be the only legitimate "Roman Emperor", and thus, ruler of all of the provinces of the ancient empire, whether recognised or not), declared for "he who had the power" and immediately crowned Pippin.

"Decades later, in 800, Pippin's son Charlemagne was crowned emperor by the Pope, further extending the principle by delegitimising the nominal authority of the Byzantine emperor in the Italian peninsula (which had, by then, shrunk to encompass little more than Apulia and Calabria at best) and ancient Roman Gaul, including the Iberian outposts Charlemagne had established in the Marca Hispanica across the Pyrenees, what today forms Catalonia. In short, though the Byzantine Emperor claimed authority over all the old Roman Empire, as the legitimate "Roman" Emperor, it was simply not reality. The bulk of the Western Roman Empire had come under Carolingian rule, the Byzantine Emperor having had almost no authority in the West since the sixth century, though Charlemagne, a consummate politician, preferred to avoid an open breach with Constantinople. An institution unique in history was being born: the Holy Roman Empire. Though the sardonic Voltaire ridiculed its nomenclature, saying that the Holy Roman Empire was "neither Holy, nor Roman, nor an Empire," it constituted an enormous political power for a time, especially under the Saxon and Salian dynasties and, to a lesser extent, the Hohenstaufen. It lasted until 1806, by then it was a nonentity. Though his grandson became its first emperor, the "empire" such as it was, was largely born during the reign of Charles Martel.

"Charles was that rarest of commodities in the Middle Ages: a brilliant strategic general, who also was a tactical commander par excellence, able in the heat of battle to adapt his plans to his foe's forces and movement? and amazingly, to defeat them repeatedly, especially when, as at Tours, they were far superior in men and weaponry, and at Berre and Narbonne, when they were superior in numbers of fighting men. Charles had the last quality which defines genuine greatness in a military commander: he foresaw the dangers of his

Ancestors of "James V" James

foes, and prepared for them with care; he used ground, time, place, and fierce loyalty of his troops to offset his foe's superior weaponry and tactics; third, he adapted, again and again, to the enemy on the battlefield, shifting to compensate for the unforeseen and unforeseeable.

"Gibbon, whose tribute to Martel has been noted, was not alone among the great mid era historians in fervently praising Martel; Thomas Arnold ranks the victory of Charles Martel even higher than the victory of Arminius in the Battle of the Teutoburg Forest in its impact on all of modern history:

"Charles Martel's victory at Tours was among those signal deliverances which have affected for centuries the happiness of mankind." [History of the later Roman Commonwealth, vol ii. p. 317.]

"German historians are especially ardent in their praise of Martel and in their belief that he saved Europe and Christianity from the all-conquering Islam, praising him also for driving back the ferocious Saxon barbarians on his borders. Schlegel speaks of this "mighty victory" in terms of fervent gratitude, and tells how "the arm of Charles Martel saved and delivered the Christian nations of the West from the deadly grasp of all-destroying Islam", and Ranke points out,

"as one of the most important epochs in the history of the world, the commencement of the eighth century, when on the one side Mohammedanism threatened to overspread Italy and Gaul, and on the other the ancient idolatry of Saxony and Friesland once more forced its way across the Rhine. In this peril of Christian institutions, a youthful prince of Germanic race, Karl Martell, arose as their champion, maintained them with all the energy which the necessity for self-defence calls forth, and finally extended them into new regions."

"In 1922 and 1923, Belgian historian Henri Pirenne published a series of papers, known collectively as the "Pirenne Thesis", which remain influential to this day. Pirenne held that the Roman Empire continued, in the Frankish realms, up until the time of the Arab conquests in the 7th century. These conquests disrupted Mediterranean trade routes leading to a decline in the European economy. Such continued disruption would have meant complete disaster except for Charles Martel's halting of Islamic expansion into Europe from 732 on. What he managed to preserve led to the Carolingian Renaissance, named after him.

"Professor Santosuosso[7] perhaps sums up Martel best when he talks about his coming to the rescue of his Christian allies in Provence, and driving the Muslims back into the Iberian Peninsula forever in the mid and late 730's::

"After assembling forces at Saragossa the Muslims entered French territory in 735, crossed the River Rhone and captured and looted Arles. From there they struck into the heart of Provence, ending with the capture of Avignon, despite strong resistance. Islamic forces remained in French territory for about four years, carrying raids to Lyon, Burgundy, and Piedmont. Again Charles Martel came to the rescue, reconquering most of the lost territories in two campaigns in 736 and 739, except for the city of Narbonne, which finally fell in 759. This second (Muslim) expedition was probably more dangerous than the first to Poitiers. Yet its failure (at Martel's hands) put an end to any serious Muslim expedition across the Pyrenees (forever)."

"In the Netherlands, a vital part of the Carolingian Empire, and in the low countries, he is considered a hero. In France and Germany, he is revered as a hero of epic proportions.

"Skilled as an administrator and ruler, Martel organized what would become the medieval European government: a system of fiefdoms, loyal to barons, counts, dukes and ultimately the King, or in his case, simply maior domus and princeps et dux Francorum. ('First or Dominant Mayor and Prince of the Franks') His close coordination of church with state began the medieval pattern for such government. He created what would become the first western standing army since the fall of Rome by his maintaining a core of loyal veterans around

Ancestors of "James V" James

which he organized the normal feudal levies. In essence, he changed Europe from a horde of barbarians fighting with one another, to an organized state.

Beginning of the Reconquista

"Although it took another two generations for the Franks to drive all the Arab garrisons out of Septimania and across the Pyrenees, Charles Martel's halt of the invasion of French soil turned the tide of Islamic advances, and the unification of the Frankish kingdoms under Martel, his son Pippin the Younger, and his grandson Charlemagne created a western power which prevented the Emirate of Córdoba from expanding over the Pyrenees. Martel, who in 732 was on the verge of excommunication, instead was recognised by the Church as its paramount defender. Pope Gregory II wrote him more than once, asking his protection and aid,[16] and he remained, till his death, fixated on stopping the Muslims. Martel's son Pippin the Younger kept his father's promise and returned and took Narbonne by siege in 759, and his grandson, Charlemagne, actually established the Marca Hispanica across the Pyrenees in part of what today is Catalonia, reconquering Girona in 785 and Barcelona in 801. This sector of what is now Spain was then called "The Moorish Marches" by the Carolingians, who saw it as not just a check on the Muslims in Hispania, but the beginning of taking the entire country back. This formed a permanent buffer zone against Islam, which became the basis, along with the King of Asturias, named Pelayo (718-737, who started his fight against the Moors in the mountains of Covadonga, 722) and his descendants, for the Reconquista until all of the Muslims were eradicated from the Iberian Peninsula.

Military legacy

Heavy infantry and permanent army

"Victor Davis Hanson argues that Charles Martel launched 'the thousand year struggle' between European heavy infantry, and Muslim cavalry.[17] Of course, Martel is also the father of heavy cavalry in Europe, as he integrated heavy armoured cavalry into his forces. This creation of a real army would continue all through his reign, and that of his son, Pepin the Short, until his grandson, Charlemagne, would possess the world's largest and finest army since the peak of Rome.[18] Equally, the Muslims used infantry - indeed, at the Battle of Toulouse most of their forces were light infantry. It was not till Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi brought a huge force of Arab and Berber cavalry with him when he assumed the emirate of Al-Andalus that the Muslim forces became primarily cavalry.

"Martel's army was known primarily for being the first standing permanent army since Rome's fall in 476, and for the core of tough, seasoned heavy infantry who stood so stoutly at Tours. The Frankish infantry wore as much as 70 pounds of armour, including their heavy wooden shields with an iron boss. Standing close together, and well disciplined, they were unbreakable at Tours.[19] Martel had taken the money and property he had seized from the church and paid local nobles to supply trained ready infantry year round. This was the core of veterans who served with him on a permanent basis, and as Hanson says, "provided a steady supply of dependable troops year around." This was the first permanent army since Rome. "[18] While other Germanic cultures, such as the Visigoths or Vandals, had a proud martial tradition, and the Franks themselves had an annual muster of military aged men, such tribes were only able to field armies around planting and harvest. It was Martel's creation of a system whereby he could call on troops year round that gave the Carolingians the first standing and permanent army since Rome's fall in the west.

"And, first and foremost, Charles Martel will always be remembered for his victory at Tours. Creasy argues that the Martel victory 'preserved the relics of ancient and the germs of modern civilizations.' Gibbon called those eight days in 732, the week leading up to Tours, and the battle itself, 'the events that rescued our ancestors of Britain, and our neighbors of Gaul [France], from the civil and religious yoke of the Koran.' Paul Akers, in his editorial on Charles Martel, says for those who value Christianity 'you might spare a minute sometime today, and every October, to say a silent thank you to a gang of half-savage Germans and especially to their leader, Charles The Hammer Martel.' [20]

Ancestors of "James V" James

"In his vision of what would be necessary for him to withstand a larger force and superior technology (the Muslim horsemen had adopted the armour and accoutrements of heavy cavalry from the Sassanid Warrior Class, which made the first knights possible), he, daring not to send his few horsemen against the Islamic cavalry, used his army to fight in a formation used by the ancient Greeks to withstand superior numbers and weapons by discipline, courage, and a willingness to die for their cause: a phalanx. He had trained a core of his men year-round, using mostly Church funds, and some had literally been with him since his earliest days after his father's death. It was this hardcore of disciplined veterans that won the day for him at Tours. Hanson emphasizes that Martel's greatest accomplishment as a General may have been his ability to keep his troops under control. This absolute iron discipline saved his infantry from the fate of so many infantrymen - such as the Saxons at Hastings - who broke formation and were slaughtered piecemeal. After using this infantry force by itself at Tours, he studied the foe's forces and further adapted to them, initially using stirrups and saddles recovered from the foe's dead horses, and armour from the dead horsemen.

Development of heavy cavalry

"After 732, he began the integration into his army of heavy cavalry, using the armour and accoutrements of heavy armoured horsemen, training his infantry to fight in conjunction with cavalry, a tactic which stood him in good stead during his campaigns of 736-737, especially at the Battle of Narbonne. His incorporation of heavy armoured cavalry into the western forces created the first "knights" in the west.

Brilliant generalship

"Martel earned his reputation for brilliant generalship, in an age generally bereft of same, by his ability to use what he had and by integrating new ideas and technology. As a consequence, he was undefeated from 716 to his death against a wide range of opponents, including the Muslim cavalry (at that time, the world's best) and the fierce barbarian Saxons on his own borders -- and all this in spite of virtually always being outnumbered. He was the only general in the Middle Ages in Europe to use the eastern battle technique of feigned retreat. His ability to attack where he was least expected and when he was least expected was legendary. The process of the development of the famous chivalry of France continued in the Edict of Pistres of his great-great-grandson and namesake Charles the Bald.

"The defeats Martel inflicted on the Muslims were vital in that they split in the Islamic world left the Caliphate unable to mount an all-out attack on Europe via its Iberian stronghold after 750. His ability to meet this challenge, until the Muslims self-destructed, is considered by most historians to be of macrohistorical importance, and is why Dante writes of him in Heaven as one of the "Defenders of the Faith." After 750, the door to western Europe, the Iberian emirate, was in the hands of the Umayyads, while most of the remainder of the Muslim world came under the control of the Abbasids, making an invasion of Europe a logistical impossibility while the two Muslim empires battled. This put off Islamic invasion of Europe until the Turkish conquest of the Balkans half a millennium later.

"H. G. Wells says of Charles Martel's decisive defeat of the Muslims in his "Short History of the World:

"The Muslim when they crossed the Pyrenees in 720 found this Frankish kingdom under the practical rule of Charles Martel, the Mayor of the Palace of a degenerate descendant of Clovis, and experienced the decisive defeat of Poitiers (732) at his hands. This Charles Martel was practically overlord of Europe north of the Alps from the Pyrenees to Hungary." [21]

John H. Haaren says in ?Famous Men of the Middle Ages?

Ancestors of "James V" James

'The battle of Tours, or Poitiers, as it should be called, is regarded as one of the decisive battles of the world. It decided that Christians, and not Moslems, should be the ruling power in Europe. Charles Martel is especially celebrated as the hero of this battle.'

"Just as his grandson, Charlemagne, would become famous for his swift and unexpected movements in his campaigns, Charles was legendary for never doing what his enemies forecast he would do. It was this ability to do the unforeseen, and move far faster than his opponents believed he could, that characterized the military career of Charles Martel.

"It is notable that the Northmen did not begin their European raids until after the death of Martel's grandson, Charlemagne. They had then a naval capacity to begin those raids at least three generations earlier, but chose not to challenge Martel, his son Pippin, or his grandson, Charlemagne. This was probably fortunate for Martel, who despite his enormous gifts, would probably not have been able to repel the Vikings in addition to the Muslims, Saxons, and everyone else he defeated. However, it is notable that again, despite the ability to do so, (the Danes had constructed defenses to defend from counterattacks by land, and had the ability to launch their wholesale sea raids as early as Martel's reign), they chose not to challenge Charles Martel.

Conclusion

"J.M. Roberts says of Charles Martel in his note on the Carolingians on page 315 of his 1993 History of the World:

'It (the Carolingian line) produced Charles Martel, the soldier who turned the Arabs back at Tours, and the supporter of Saint Boniface, the Evangelizer of Germany. This is a considerable double mark to have left on the history of Europe.'

"Gibbon perhaps summarized Charles Martel's legacy most eloquently: 'In a laborious administration of 24 years he had restored and supported the dignity of the throne..by the activity of a warrior who in the same campaign could display his banner on the Elbe, the Rhone, and shores of the ocean.'

Family and children

"Charles Martel married twice:

"His first wife was Rotrude of Treves, (690-724) (daughter of St. Leutwinus, Bishop of Treves). They had the following children:

- * Hiltrud (d. 754), married Odilo I, Duke of Bavaria
- * Carloman
- * Landrade (Landres), married Sigrand, Count of Hesbania
- * Auda, Aldana, or Alane, married Thierry IV, Count of Autun and Toulouse
- * Pippin the Short

"His second wife was Swanhild. They had the following child:

- * Grifo

"Charles Martel also had a mistress, Ruodhaid. They had the following children:

- * Bernard (b. before 732-787)
- * Hieronymus
- * Remigius, archbishop of Rouen (d. 771)
- * Ian (d. 783)

Sources:

Ancestors of "James V" James

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_Martel

1. ^ e. the Fat so. 2001. The Encyclopedia of World History
2. ^ "Charles Martel". Catholic Encyclopedia. (1913). New York:Robert Appleton Company.
3. ^ More information can be found in Louis deMartelly's book,"Charles Martel and theLance of Destiny." [1]
4. ^ a b Battle of Tours - Britannica Online Encyclopedia
5. ^ Fouracre, John. ?The Age of Charles Martel
6. ^ Davis1999, p. 104.
7. ^ a b Santosuosso, Anthony . Barbarians, Marauders, andInfidels2004
8. ^ Poke's Fifteen Decisive Battles
9. ^ An Islamic Europe?, Tomorrow's World, Volume 8, No 3. ; AnIslamic Europe?
10. ^ Watson, William, E. (1993). The Battle of Tours-PoitiersRevisited. Providence: Studies in Western Civilization v.2 n.1.
11. ^ Barbero, 2004, p. 10.
12. ^ Mastnak, 2002, pp. 99-100.
13. ^ Hanson, Victor Davis, 2001, p. 167.
14. ^ Cassius Dio ? Book 40
15. ^ Home Page
16. ^ Medieval Sourcebook: Pope Gregory II - Appeal to Charles Martel
17. ^ Hanson, 2001, p. 141-166.
18. ^ a b Bennett, Michael. Fighting Techniques of the Medieval World
19. ^ Hanson, 2001, p. 154.
20. ^ Fredericksburg.com - Why Islam didn't conquer the world I vs.From the plains of medieval France to the modern Mideast, militantMuslims test Christians and Jews
21. ^ 45. The Development of Latin Christendom. Wells, H.G. 1922. AShort History of the World

436 **Gor "Sea King" Thorasson** was born about 400 AD in Kvenland, Finland.
276
736.

436 **Cenred** (son of Ceolwald and UNNAMED) was born in 644 AD in Wessex, England. He
322 married **UNNAMED**.
304.

436 **UNNAMED** was born in 648 AD.

322

305. Notes for Cenred:

Cenred did not rule, though is was the father of King Ina (or Ine) and Ingild, Prince of Wessex.

Source: 'Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came toAmerica before 1700,' seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis,additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., GenealogicalPublishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library ofCongress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1.

490 **"Charles the Great" Charlemagne** (son of "Pipin the Short" Pipin and Bertha Bertrada
750 "Bertrada of Laon" De Laon) was born on Apr 02, 742 AD in Ingelheim, Rheinhessen,
624. Hessen-Darmstadt, Prussia. He died in 814 AD in Aachen, Rhineland, Prussia. He married
"Liutgard" Hildegarde.

490 **"Liutgard" Hildegarde**

750

625. Notes for "Charles the Great" Charlemagne:

Charlemagne (called Charles the Great due to his great height) was King of the Franks and

Ancestors of "James V" James

Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire.

Charlemagne is the 38th great grandfather of U. S. President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. Roosevelt is the 18th cousin, four times removed to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland.

Charlemagne is the 29th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother through her second marriage, which was to Governor William Bradford. Edward Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed.

Charlemagne is the 34th great grandfather of President John Quincy Adams, my 31st cousin, twice removed. Our ancestors in common are Ragnvald I (died in 890 AD) and his wife, Hild, who were the 28th great grandparents to John Quincy Adams.

In addition, King Charlemagne is the 41st great grandfather of Steven Otis Westmoreland, the dashing young man who married our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe! This co-mingling of families made our daughter a thirty-fourth cousin, four times removed from her husband prior to their marriage. Another family tie is that Charlemagne shares the same birthday as my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe.

We can learn about Charlemagne easily from public domain information on the Internet. Here is a sample:

"He was six feet four inches tall, and built to scale. He had beautiful white hair, animated eyes, a powerful nose... a presence' always stately and dignified.' He was temperate in eating and drinking, abominated drunkenness, and kept in good health despite every exposure and hardship." This quote is from Eginhardt (the King's secretary) describing Charlemagne

Charlemagne (Charles the Great) was born on April 2, 742 in Northern Europe. "By the sword and the cross," he became master of Western Europe. Through his enlightened leadership the roots of learning and order were restored to Medieval Europe.

In 768, when Charlemagne was 26, he and his brother Carloman inherited the kingdom of the Franks. In 771 Carloman died, and Charlemagne became sole ruler of the kingdom. At that time the Franks were falling back into barbarian ways, neglecting their education and religion. The Saxons of northern Europe were still pagans. In the south, the Roman Catholic church was asserting its power to recover land confiscated by the Lombard kingdom of Italy. Europe was in turmoil.

Charlemagne was determined to strengthen his realm and to bring order to Europe. In 772 he launched a 30-year military campaign to accomplish this objective. By 800 Charlemagne was the undisputed ruler of Western Europe. His vast realm encompassed what are now France, Switzerland, Belgium, and The Netherlands. It included half of present-day Italy and Germany, and parts of Austria and Spain. By establishing a central government over Western Europe, Charlemagne restored much of the unity of the old Roman Empire and paved the way for the development of modern Europe.

On Christmas Day in 800, while Charlemagne knelt in prayer in SaintPeter's in Rome, Pope Leo III placed a golden crown on the bowed head of the king. Charlemagne is said to have been surprised by the coronation, declaring that he would not have come into the church had he known the pope's plan. However, some historians say the pope would not have dared to act without Charlemagne's knowledge.

Charlemagne learned to read Latin and some Greek, but apparently did not master writing. At meals, instead of having jesters perform, he listened to visiting scholars read from learned works. Charlemagne believed that government should be for the benefit of the governed. He was a tireless reformer who tried to improve his people's lives. He set up

Ancestors of "James V" James

money standards to encourage commerce, urged better farming methods and worked to spread education and Christianity.

I give thanks for the description above provided through the web site at www.lucidcafe.com/library/96apr/charlemagne.html.

Another more detailed telling of the life and effects of KingCharlemagne:

Durant, Will. "King Charlemagne", History of Civilization Vol III, TheAge of Faith. Electronic version in the Knighthood, Tournaments &Chivalry Resource Library, Ed. Brian R. Price.

<http://www.chronique.com/Library/MedHistory/charlemagne.htm>

490 **Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson** (son of Heiti Gorsson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark,
750 Norway.
848.

490 **Eoppa** (son of Ingild and UNNAMED) was born in 706 AD in Wessex, England. He married
762 **UNNAMED**.
240.

490 **UNNAMED** was born in 710 AD.
762
241.

499 **"Charles the Great" Charlemagne** (son of "Pipin the Short" Pipin and Bertha Bertrada
139 "Bertrada of Laon" De Laon) was born on Apr 02, 742 AD in Ingelheim, Rheinhessen,
232. Hessen-Darmstadt, Prussia. He died in 814 AD in Aachen, Rhineland, Prussia. He married
"Liutgard" Hildegarde.

499 **"Liutgard" Hildegarde**
139
233. Notes for "Charles the Great" Charlemagne:

Charlemagne (called Charles the Great due to his great height) was King of the Franks and Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire.

Charlemagne is the 38th great grandfather of U. S. President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. Roosevelt is the 18th cousin, four times removed to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland.

Charlemagne is the 29th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother through her second marriage, which was to Governor William Bradford. Edward Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed.

Charlemagne is the 34th great grandfather of President John Quincy Adams, my 31st cousin, twice removed. Our ancestors in common are Ragnvald I (died in 890 AD) and his wife, Hild, who were the 28th great grandparents to John Quincy Adams.

In addition, King Charlemagne is the 41st great grandfather of Steven Otis Westmoreland, the dashing young man who married our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe! This co-mingling of families made our daughter a thirty-fourth cousin, four times removed from her husband prior to their marriage. Another family tie is that Charlemagne shares the same birthday as my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe.

We can learn about Charlemagne easily from public domain information on the Internet. Here is a sample:

Ancestors of "James V" James

"He was six feet four inches tall, and built to scale. He had beautiful white hair, animated eyes, a powerful nose... a presence' always stately and dignified.' He was temperate in eating and drinking, abominated drunkenness, and kept in good health despite every exposure and hardship." This quote is from Eginhardt (the King's secretary) describing Charlemagne

Charlemagne (Charles the Great) was born on April 2, 742 in Northern Europe. "By the sword and the cross," he became master of Western Europe. Through his enlightened leadership the roots of learning and order were restored to Medieval Europe.

In 768, when Charlemagne was 26, he and his brother Carloman inherited the kingdom of the Franks. In 771 Carloman died, and Charlemagne became sole ruler of the kingdom. At that time the Franks were falling back into barbarian ways, neglecting their education and religion. The Saxons of northern Europe were still pagans. In the south, the Roman Catholic church was asserting its power to recover land confiscated by the Lombard kingdom of Italy. Europe was in turmoil.

Charlemagne was determined to strengthen his realm and to bring order to Europe. In 772 he launched a 30-year military campaign to accomplish this objective. By 800 Charlemagne was the undisputed ruler of Western Europe. His vast realm encompassed what are now France, Switzerland, Belgium, and The Netherlands. It included half of present-day Italy and Germany, and parts of Austria and Spain. By establishing a central government over Western Europe, Charlemagne restored much of the unity of the old Roman Empire and paved the way for the development of modern Europe.

On Christmas Day in 800, while Charlemagne knelt in prayer in SaintPeter's in Rome, Pope Leo III placed a golden crown on the bowed head of the king. Charlemagne is said to have been surprised by the coronation, declaring that he would not have come into the church had he known the pope's plan. However, some historians say the pope would not have dared to act without Charlemagne's knowledge.

Charlemagne learned to read Latin and some Greek, but apparently did not master writing. At meals, instead of having jesters perform, he listened to visiting scholars read from learned works. Charlemagne believed that government should be for the benefit of the governed. He was a tireless reformer who tried to improve his people's lives. He set up money standards to encourage commerce, urged better farming methods and worked to spread education and Christianity.

I give thanks for the description above provided through the web site at www.lucidcafe.com/library/96apr/charlemagne.html.

Another more detailed telling of the life and effects of KingCharlemagne:

Durant, Will. "King Charlemagne", History of Civilization Vol III, TheAge of Faith. Electronic version in the Knighthood, Tournaments &Chivalry Resource Library, Ed. Brian R. Price.

<http://www.chronique.com/Library/MedHistory/charlemagne.htm>

499 **Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson** (son of Heiti Gorsson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark,
139 Norway.
456.

499 **Eoppa** (son of Ingild and UNNAMED) was born in 706 AD in Wessex, England. He married
150 **UNNAMED**.
848.

499 **UNNAMED** was born in 710 AD.

Ancestors of "James V" James

150
849.

Generation 30

872 **"Pepin II of Herista" Pipin** (son of Ansegisel and "Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant) was
551 born in 643 AD in Austrasia, France. He died on Dec 16, 714 AD in Austrasia, France. He
680. married **Alpaide Chalpaide**.

872 **Alpaide Chalpaide** was born in 657 AD in Paris, France. She died in 692 AD in Austrasia,
551 France.
681.

Notes for "Pepin II of Herista" Pipin:

Pipin was the 14th great grandfather of the husband of 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of my seventh great grandmother, Alice Carpenter.

"Pepin (also Pippin, Pipin, or Peppin) of Herstal (c. 635 ? 16 December 714) was the Mayor of the Palace of Austrasia from 680 to his death and of Neustria and Burgundy from 687 to 695. He was also the first mayor of the palace to "reign" as Duke and Prince of the Franks and he by far overshadowed the Merovingian rois fain Éants.

"Pepin, sometimes called Pepin II and Pepin the Middle was the grandson and namesake of Pepin I the Elder by the marriage of Pepin's daughter, Begga, and Ansegisel, son of Arnulf of Metz. That marriage, united the two houses of the Pippinids and the Arnulfings which, created what would be called the Carolingian dynasty. ,Pepin II was, probably born in Herstal (HÉristal), modern Belgium (where his centre, of power lay), whence his by, name (sometimes "of Heristal").

"As mayor of Austrasia, Pepin and Martin, the duke of Laon, fought the Neustrian mayor Ebroin, who had designs on all Frankland. Ebroin defeated the Austrasians at Lucofao (Bois-du-Fay, near Laon) and came close to uniting all the Franks under his rule; however, he was assassinated in 681, the victim of a combined attack by his numerous enemies. Pepin immediately made peace with his successor, Waratton.

"However, Waratton's successor, Berthar, and the Neustrian king Theuderic III, who, since 679, was nominal king of all the Franks, made war on Austrasia. The king and his mayor were decisively defeated at the Battle of Tertry (Textrice) in the Vermandois in 687. Berthar and Theuderic withdrew themselves to Paris, where Pepin followed and eventually forced on them a peace treaty with the condition that Berthar leave his office. Pepin was created mayor in all three Frankish kingdoms (Austrasia, Neustria, and Burgundy) and began calling himself Duke and Prince of the Franks (dux et princeps Francorum). In the ensuing quarrels, Berthar killed his mother-in-law Ansfléd and fled. His wife Anstrude married Pepin's eldest son Drogo, Duke of Champagne, and Pepin's place in Neustria was secured.

"Over the next several years, Pepin subdued the Alemanni, Frisians, and Franconians, bringing them within the Frankish sphere of influence. He also began the evangelisation of Germany. In 695, he replaced Drogo in the Burgundian mayorship and his other son, Grimoald, in the Neustrian one.

"Around 670, Pepin had married Plectrude, who had inherited substantial estates in the Moselle region. She was the mother of Drogo of Champagne and Grimoald, both of whom died before their father. However, Pepin also had a mistress named Alpaïda (or Chalpaïda) who bore him two more sons: Charles and Childebrand. Just before Pepin's death, Plectrude convinced him to disinherit his bastards in favour of his grandson, Theudoald, the son of Grimoald, who was still young (and amenable to Plectrude's control). Pepin died suddenly at an old age on 16 December 714, at Jupille (in modern Belgium). His legitimate grandchildren claimed themselves to be Pepin's true successors and, with the help of Plectrude, tried to

Ancestors of "James V" James

maintain the position of mayor of the palace after Pepin's death. However, Charles had gained favor among the Austrasians, primarily for his military prowess and ability to keep them well supplied with booty from his conquests. Despite the efforts of Plectrude to silence her rival's child by imprisoning him, he became the sole mayor of the palace --and de facto ruler of Francia-- after a civil war which lasted for more than three years after Pepin's death."

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pepin_of_Herstal

* Oman, Charles. The Dark Ages 476-918. London: Rivingtons, 1914.

* Wallace-Hadrill, J. M., translator. The Fourth Book of the Chronicle of Fredegar with its Continuations. Connecticut: Greenwood Press, 1960.

* Bachrach, Bernard S., translator. Liber Historiae Francorum. 1973.

872 **Ceolwald** (son of Cutha and UNNAMED) was born in 622 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
644
608.

872 **UNNAMED** was born in 626 AD.

644

609. Notes for Ceolwald:

St Deusdedit I began his reign as Catholic Pope on October 19, 625 AD.

Source: <http://www.scopesys.com/cgi-bin/today2.cgi>

981 **"Pipin the Short" Pipin** (son of Charles "The Hammer" Martel and "Rotrude of Treves"
501 Rotrude) was born in 714 AD in Ingelheim, Rheinhessen, Hessen-Darmstadt, Prussia. He
248. died on Sep 24, 768 AD in Sst. Denis, Paris, Seine, France. He married **Bertha Bertrada**
"Bertrada of Laon" De Laon about 740 AD in Laon, Aisne, France.

981 **Bertha Bertrada "Bertrada of Laon" De Laon** was born in 720 AD in Laon, France. She
501 died on Jul 12, 783 AD in Aachen, Austrasia.
249.

981 **Heiti Gorsson** (son of Gor "Sea King" Thorrasson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark,
501 Norway.
696.

981 **Ingild** (son of Cenred and UNNAMED) was born in 680 AD in Wessex, England. He died in
524 718 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
480.

981 **UNNAMED** was born in 684 AD.

524

481. Notes for Ingild:

Ingild did not rule.

998 **"Pipin the Short" Pipin** (son of Charles "The Hammer" Martel and "Rotrude of Treves"
278 Rotrude) was born in 714 AD in Ingelheim, Rheinhessen, Hessen-Darmstadt, Prussia. He
464. died on Sep 24, 768 AD in Sst. Denis, Paris, Seine, France. He married **Bertha Bertrada**
"Bertrada of Laon" De Laon about 740 AD in Laon, Aisne, France.

998 **Bertha Bertrada "Bertrada of Laon" De Laon** was born in 720 AD in Laon, France. She
278 died on Jul 12, 783 AD in Aachen, Austrasia.

Ancestors of "James V" James

465.

998 **Heiti Gorsson** (son of Gor "Sea King" Thorrrasson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark,
278 Norway.
912.

998 **Ingild** (son of Cenred and UNNAMED) was born in 680 AD in Wessex, England. He died in
301 718 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.
696.

998 **UNNAMED** was born in 684 AD.

301
697. Notes for Ingild:

Ingild did not rule.

Generation 31

174 **Ansegisel** (son of Arnulf De Heristal and Ode De Heristal) was born in 618 AD in Austrasia,
510 France. He died in 691 AD in Austrasia, France. He married "**Begga**" **St. De Landen-**
336 **Brabant**.
0.

174 "**Begga**" **St. De Landen-Brabant** (daughter of "Pepin I of Brabant-Landen" Pepin and Itta
510 Idoberg) was born in 624 AD in Landen, Brabant, Belgium. She died on Dec 17, 693 AD in
336 Austrasia, France.
1.

Notes for Ansegisel:

Ansegisel (also Ansgise) (also Ansegus) (also Anchises)(ca 602 or 610 ?murdered before 679 or 662) was the son of Saint Arnulf, bishop of Metz and his wife Saint Doda. He served King Sigbert III of Austrasia(634-656) as a duke (Latin dux, a military leader) and domesticus. Hewas killed sometime before 679, slain in a feud by his enemy Gundewin.

Marriage and issue

He married sometime after 639 to Saint Begga, the daughter of Pepin of Landen.

They had the following children:

- * Pippin II (635 or 640-December 16, 714), mayor of the palace of Austrasia
- * Martin, count of Laon
- * Clotilda of Heristal (650-699), married King Theodoric III of Neustria

Sources: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ansegisel>

* Les ancêtres de Charlemagne, 1989, Christian Settipani

This biography of a European noble is a stub. You can help Wikipedia by expanding it.

Notes for "Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant:

Saint Begga (also Begue) (615 ? December 17, 693) was the daughter of Pepin of Landen, mayor of the palace of Austrasia, and his wife Itta. On the death of her husband, she took the veil, founded several churches, and built a convent at Andenne on the Meuse River (Andennesur Meuse) where she spent the rest of her days as abbess.

Some hold that the Beguine movement which came to light in the 12th century was actually

Ancestors of "James V" James

founded by St. Begga; and the church in the beguinage of Lier, Belgium, has a statue of St. Begga standing above the inscription: St. Begga, our foundress. The Lier beguinage dates from the 13th century. More than likely, however, the Beguines derived their name from that of the priest Lambert le Begue, under whose protection the witness and ministry of the Beguines flourished.

[edit] Marriage and issue

She married Ansegisel, son of Arnulf, Bishop of Metz, and had three children:

- * Pepin of Heristal
- * Martin of Laon
- * Clotilda of Heristal, who was married to Theuderic III of the Franks

Veneration

She is commemorated as a saint on her feast days, September 6 and December 17.

References: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Begga>

* Attwater, Donald and Catherine Rachel John. The Penguin Dictionary of Saints. 3rd edition. New York: Penguin Books, 1993. ISBN 0140513124.

* Les ancêtres de Charlemagne, 1989, Christian Settipani

174 **Cutha** (son of Cuthwine and UNNAMED) was born in 600 AD in Wessex, England. He
528 married **UNNAMED**.
921
6.

174 **UNNAMED** was born in 604 AD.

528
921 Notes for Cutha:
7.

This Cutha did not rule.

Source: ?Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700, ? seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1

196 **Charles "The Hammer" Martel** (son of "Pepin II of Herista" Pipin and Alpaide Chalpaide)
300 was born on Aug 23, 686 AD in Austrasia, France. He died on Oct 22, 741 AD in Quierzy,
249 Austrasia. He married **"Rotrude of Treves" Rotrude**.
6.

196 **"Rotrude of Treves" Rotrude** was born in 690 AD in 724.

300
249 Notes for Charles "The Hammer" Martel:
7.

Charles 'the Hammer' Martel (August 23, 686 ? October 22, 741) is the 45th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, children of my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe, and her husband, Steven O. Westmoreland, through whom the Martel line comes.

"He was proclaimed Mayor of the Palace and ruled the Franks in the name of a titular King. Late in his reign he proclaimed himself Duke of the Franks (the last four years of his reign he did not even bother with the façade of a King) and by any name was de facto ruler of the Frankish Realms. In 739 he was offered an office of Roman consul by the Pope, which he rejected[1] possibly not to conflict with Theodatus Ursus who already occupied the office

Ancestors of "James V" James

by appointment of the Byzantine emperor Leo III the Isaurian. He expanded his rule over all three of the Frankish kingdoms: Austrasia, Neustria and Burgundy. Martel was born in Herstal, in present-day Belgium, the illegitimate son of Pippin the Middle and his concubine Alpaïda (or Chalpaïda).[2] He was described by Louis Gustave and Charles Strauss in their book "Moslem and Frank; or, Charles Martel and the rescue of Europe" as a tall, powerfully built man, who was more agile than his size would lead one to believe.

"He is best remembered for winning the Battle of Tours in 732, which has traditionally been characterized as an event that halted the Islamic expansionism in Europe that had conquered Iberia.[3]" Charles's victory has often been regarded as decisive for world history, since it preserved western Europe from Muslim conquest and Islamization." [4]

"In addition to being the leader of the army that prevailed at Tours, Charles Martel was a truly giant figure of the Middle Ages. A brilliant general, he is considered the forefather of western heavy cavalry, chivalry, founder of the Carolingian Empire (which was named after him), and a catalyst for the feudal system, which would see Europe through the Middle Ages. Although some recent scholars have suggested he was more of a beneficiary of the feudal system than a knowing agent for social change, others continue to see him as the primary catalyst for the feudal system." [5]

"The following tale is told of Charles, and the origins of his name: in 686, Pippin II and his wife Plectrude were talking together in a room when they were intruded upon by a messenger, bringing news that the Mayor's mistress, Alpaïda, had given birth to a son at Herstal. The messenger, fearful of arousing the wrath of Plectrude, decided not to announce the news directly. Instead, he said: "Long live the king, it is a carl" ('man'). Pippin, equally cautious of his wife, dismissed the messenger as follows: "A carl, is it? Then let him be called that." This was done, and, so legend claims, the child was named "Carl". Alpaïda also bore Pippin another son, Childebrand.

"In December 714, Pippin the Middle (Pippin II) died. Prior to his death, he had, at his wife Plectrude's urging, designated Theudoald, his grandson by their son Grimoald, his heir in the entire realm. This was immediately opposed by the nobles because Theudoald was a child of only eight years of age. To prevent Charles using this unrest to his own advantage, Plectrude had him gaoled (jailed) in Cologne, the city which was destined to be her capital. This prevented an uprising on his behalf in Austrasia, but not in Neustria

"In 715, the Neustrian nobles proclaimed Ragenfrid mayor of their palace on behalf of, and apparently with the support of, Dagobert III, the young king, who in theory had the legal authority to select a mayor, though by this time the Merovingian dynasty had lost most such powers.

"The Austrasians were not to be left supporting a woman and her young son for long. Before the end of the year, Charles Martel had escaped from prison and been acclaimed mayor by the nobles of that kingdom. The Neustrians had been attacking Austrasia and the nobles were waiting for a strong man to lead them against their invading countrymen. That year, Dagobert died and the Neustrians proclaimed Chilperic II king without the support of the rest of the Frankish people.

"In 716, Chilperic and Ragenfrid together led an army into Austrasia. The Neustrians allied with another invading force under Radbod, King of the Frisians and met Charles in battle near Cologne, which was still held by Plectrude. Charles had little time to gather men, or prepare, and the result was his only defeat. According to Strauss and Gustave, Martel fought a brilliant battle, but realized he could not prevail because he was outnumbered so badly, and retreated. In fact, he fled the field as soon as he realized he did not have the time or the men to prevail, retreating to the mountains of the Eifel to gather men, and train them. The king and his mayor then turned to besiege their other rival in the city and took it and the treasury, and received the recognition of both Chilperic as king and Ragenfrid as mayor. Plectrude surrendered on Theudoald's behalf.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Magnanimous in victory

"At this juncture, however, events turned in favour of Charles. Having made the proper preparations, he fell upon the triumphant army near Malmedy as it was returning to its own province, and, in the ensuing Battle of Amblève, routed it and it fled. Several things were notable about this battle, in which Charles set the pattern for the remainder of his military career: First, he appeared where his enemies least expected him, while they were marching triumphantly home and far outnumbered him. He also attacked when least expected, at midday, when armies of that era traditionally were resting. Finally, he attacked them how they least expected it, by feigning a retreat to draw his opponents into a trap. The feigned retreat, next to unknown in Western Europe at that time? it was a traditionally eastern tactic? required both extraordinary discipline on the part of the troops and exact timing on the part of their commander. Charles, in this battle, had begun demonstrating the military genius that would mark his rule, in that he never attacked his enemies where, when, or how they expected, and the result was an unbroken victory streak that lasted until his death.

"In Spring 717, Charles returned to Neustria with an army and confirmed his supremacy with a victory at the Battle of Vincy, near Cambrai. He chased the fleeing king and mayor to Paris, before turning back to deal with Plectrude and Cologne. He took her city and dispersed her adherents. However, he allowed both Plectrude and the young Theudoald to live and treated them with kindness? unusual for those Dark Ages, when mercy to a former jailer, or a potential rival, was rare. On this success, he proclaimed Clotaire IV king of Austrasia in opposition to Chilperic and deposed the archbishop of Rheims, Rigobert, replacing him with Milo, a lifelong supporter.

Consolidation of power

"After subjugating all Austrasia, he marched against Radbod and pushed him back into his territory, even forcing the concession of West Frisia (later Holland). He also sent the Saxons back over the Weser and thus secured his borders? in the name of the new king Clotaire, of course. In 718, Chilperic responded to Charles' new ascendancy by making an alliance with Odo the Great (or Eudes, as he is sometimes known), the duke of Aquitaine, who had made himself independent during the civil war in 715, but was again defeated, at the Battle of Soissons, by Charles. The king fled with his ducal ally to the lands south of the Loire and Ragenfrid fled to Angers. Soon Clotaire IV died and Odo gave up on Chilperic and, in exchange for recognising his dukedom, surrendered the king to Charles, who recognised his kingship over all the Franks in return for legitimate royal affirmation of his mayoralty, likewise over all the kingdoms (718).

Foreign wars from 718-732

"The ensuing years were full of strife. Between 718 and 723, Charles secured his power through a series of victories: he won the loyalty of several important bishops and abbots (by donating lands and money for the foundation of abbeys such as Echternach), he subjugated Bavaria and Alemannia, and he defeated the pagan Saxons.

"Having unified the Franks under his banner, Charles was determined to punish the Saxons who had invaded Austrasia. Therefore, late in 718, he laid waste their country to the banks of the Weser, the Lippe, and the Ruhr. He defeated them in the Teutoburg Forest. In 719, Charles seized West Frisia without any great resistance on the part of the Frisians, who had been subjects of the Franks but had seized control upon the death of Pippin. Although Charles did not trust the pagans, their ruler, Aldegisel, accepted Christianity, and Charles sent Willibrord, bishop of Utrecht, the famous 'Apostle to the Frisians' to convert the people. Charles also did much to support Winfrid, later Saint Boniface, the "Apostle of the Germans."

"When Chilperic II died the following year (720), Charles appointed as his successor the son of Dagobert III, Theuderic IV, who was still a minor, and who occupied the throne from 720 to 737. Charles was now appointing the kings whom he supposedly served, *rois fainéants* who were mere puppets in his hands; by the end of his reign they were so useless that he

Ancestors of "James V" James

didn't even bother appointing one. At this time, Charles again marched against the Saxons. Then the Neustrians rebelled under Ragenfrid, who had been left the county of Anjou. They were easily defeated (724), but Ragenfrid gave up his sons as hostages in return for keeping his county. This ended the civil wars of Charles' reign.

"The next six years were devoted in their entirety to assuring Frankish authority over the dependent Germanic tribes. Between 720 and 723, Charles was fighting in Bavaria, where the Agilolfing dukes had gradually evolved into independent rulers, recently in alliance with Liutprand the Lombard. He forced the Alemanni to accompany him, and Duke Hugbert submitted to Frankish suzerainty. In 725 and 728, he again entered Bavaria and the ties of lordship seemed strong. From his first campaign, he brought back the Agilolfing princess Swanachild, who apparently became his concubine. In 730, he marched against Lantfrid, duke of Alemannia, who had also become independent, and killed him in battle. He forced the Alemanni capitulation to Frankish suzerainty and did not appoint a successor to Lantfrid. Thus, southern Germany once more became part of the Frankish kingdom, as had northern Germany during the first years of the reign.

"By 730, his own realm secure, Charles began to prepare exclusively for the coming storm from the south and west.

"In 721, the emir of Córdoba had built up a strong army from Morocco, Yemen, and Syria to conquer Aquitaine, the large duchy in the southwest of Gaul, nominally under Frankish sovereignty, but in practice almost independent in the hands of the Odo the Great, the Duke of Aquitaine, since the Merovingian kings had lost power. The invading Muslims besieged the city of Toulouse, then Aquitaine's most important city, and Odo (also called Eudes, or Eudo) immediately left to find help. He returned three months later just before the city was about to surrender and defeated the Muslim invaders on June 9, 721, at what is now known as the Battle of Toulouse. This critical defeat was essentially the result of a classic enveloping movement by Odo's forces. (After Odo originally fled, the Muslims became overconfident and, instead of maintaining strong outer defenses around their siege camp and continuous scouting, they did neither.) Thus, when Odo returned, he was able to launch a near complete surprise attack on the besieging force, scattering it at the first attack, and slaughtering units caught resting or that fled without weapons or armour.

"Due to the situation in Iberia, Martel believed he needed a virtually full-time army -- one he could train intensely -- as a core of veteran Franks who would be augmented with the usual conscripts called up in time of war. (During the Early Middle Ages, troops were only available after the crops had been planted and before harvesting time.) To train the kind of infantry that could withstand the Muslim heavy cavalry, Charles needed them year-round, and he needed to pay them so their families could buy the food they would have otherwise grown. To obtain money he seized church lands and property, and used the funds to pay his soldiers. The same Charles who had secured the support of the ecclesia by donating land, seized some of it back between 724 and 732. Of course, Church officials were enraged, and, for a time, it looked as though Charles might even be excommunicated for his actions. But then came a significant invasion.

Eve of Tours

"Historian Paul K. Davis said in 100 Decisive Battles Having defeated Eudes, he turned to the Rhine to strengthen his northeastern borders - but in 725 was diverted south with the activity of the Muslims in Aquitaine.' Martel then concentrated his attention to the Umayyads, virtually for the remainder of his life.[6] Indeed, 12 years later, when he had thrice rescued Gaul from Umayyad invasions, Antonio Santosuosso noted when he destroyed an Umayyad army sent to reinforce the invasion forces of the 735 campaigns, "Charles Martel again came to the rescue".[7] It has been noted that Charles Martel could have pursued the wars against the Saxons? but he was determined to prepare for what he thought was a greater danger.

"It is also vital to note that the Muslims were not aware, at that time, of the true strength of

Ancestors of "James V" James

the Franks, or the fact that they were building a real army instead of the typical barbarian hordes that had infested Europe after Rome's fall. They considered the Germanic tribes, including the Franks, simply barbarians and were not particularly concerned about them. The Arab Chronicles, the history of that age, show that Arab awareness of the Franks as a growing military power came only after the Battle of Tours when the Caliph expressed shock at his army's catastrophic defeat.

Battle of Tours

Main article Battle of Tours.

Leadup and importance

"It was under one of their ablest and most renowned commanders, with a veteran army, and with every apparent advantage of time, place, and circumstance, that the Arabs made their great effort at the conquest of Europe north of the Pyrenees." [8]

Edward Shepherd Creasy, *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World*

"The Cordoban emirate had previously invaded Gaul and had been stopped in its northward sweep at the Battle of Toulouse, in 721. The hero of that less celebrated event had been Odo the Great, Duke of Aquitaine, who was not the progenitor of a race of kings and patron of chroniclers. It has previously been explained how Odo defeated the invading Muslims, but when they returned, things were far different. The arrival in the interim of a new emir of Cordoba, Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, who brought with him a huge force of Arabs and Berber horsemen, triggered a far greater invasion. Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi had been at Toulouse, and the Arab Chronicles make clear he had strongly opposed the Emir's decision not to secure outer defenses against a relief force, which allowed Odo and his relief force to attack with impunity before the Islamic cavalry could assemble or mount. Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi had no intention of permitting such a disaster again. This time the Umayyad horsemen were ready for battle, and the results were horrific for the Aquitanians. Odo, hero of Toulouse, was badly defeated in the Muslim invasion of 732 at the battle prior to the Muslim sacking of Bordeaux, and when he gathered a second army, at the Battle of the River Garonne? where the western chroniclers state, "God alone knows the number of the slain"? and the city of Bordeaux was sacked and looted. Odo fled to Charles, seeking help. Charles agreed to come to Odo's rescue, provided Odo acknowledged Charles and his house as his overlords, which Odo did formally at once. Thus, Odo faded into history while Charles marched into it. It is interesting to note that Charles was pragmatic; while most commanders would never use their enemies in battle, Odo and his remaining Aquitanian nobles formed the right flank of Charles' force at Tours.

"The Battle of Tours earned Charles the cognomen "Martel" ("Hammer"), for the merciless way he hammered his enemies. Many historians, including the great military historian Sir Edward Creasy, believe that had he failed at Tours, Islam would probably have overrun Gaul, and perhaps the remainder of western Christian Europe. Gibbon made clear his belief that the Umayyad armies would have conquered from Rome to the Rhine, and even England, having the English Channel for protection, with ease, had Martel not prevailed. Creasy said "the great victory won by Charles Martel ... gave a decisive check to the career of Arab conquest in Western Europe, rescued Christendom from Islam, [and] preserved the relics of ancient and the germs of modern civilization." Gibbon's belief that the fate of Christianity hinged on this battle is echoed by other historians including John B. Bury, and was very popular for most of modern historiography. It fell somewhat out of style in the twentieth century, when historians such as Bernard Lewis contended that Arabs had little intention of occupying northern France. More recently, however, many historians have tended once again to view the Battle of Tours as a very significant event in the history of Europe and Christianity. Equally, many, such as William Watson, still believe this battle was one of macrohistorical world-changing importance, if they do not go so far as Gibbon does rhetorically.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"In the modern era, Matthew Bennett and his co-authors of "Fighting Techniques of the Medieval World", published in 2005, argue that "few battles are remembered 1,000 years after they are fought...but the Battle of Poitiers, (Tours) is an exception...Charles Martel turned back a Muslim raid that had it been allowed to continue, might have conquered Gaul." Michael Grant, author of "History of Rome", grants the Battle of Tours such importance that he lists it in the macrohistorical dates of the Roman era.

"It is important to note however that modern western historians, military historians, and writers, essentially fall into three camps. The first, those who believe Gibbon was right in his assessment that Martel saved Christianity and western civilization by this Battle are typified by Bennett, Paul Davis, Robert Martin, and educationalist Dexter B. Wakefield who writes in *An Islamic Europe*:

A Muslim France? Historically, it nearly happened. But as a result of Martel's fierce opposition, which ended Muslim advances and set the stage for centuries of war thereafter, Islam moved no farther into Europe. European school children learn about the Battle of Tours in much the same way that American students learn about Valley Forge and Gettysburg."^[9] ?

"The second camp of contemporary historians believe that a failure by Martel at Tours could have been a disaster, destroying what would become western civilization after the Renaissance. Certainly all historians agree that no power would have remained in Europe able to halt Islamic expansion had the Franks failed. William E. Watson, one of the most respected historians of this era, strongly supports Tours as a macrohistorical event, but distances himself from the rhetoric of Gibbon and Drubeck, writing, for example, of the battle's importance in Frankish, and world, history in 1993:

? There is clearly some justification for ranking Tours-Poitiers among the most significant events in Frankish history when one considers the result of the battle in light of the remarkable record of the successful establishment by Muslims of Islamic political and cultural dominance along the entire eastern and southern rim of the former Christian, Roman world. The rapid Muslim conquest of Palestine, Syria, Egypt and the North African coast all the way to Morocco in the seventh century resulted in the permanent imposition by force of Islamic culture onto a previously Christian and largely non-Arab base. The Visigothic kingdom fell to Muslim conquerors in a single battle on the Rio Barbate in 711, and the Hispanic Christian population took seven long centuries to regain control of the Iberian Peninsula. The Reconquista, of course, was completed in 1492, only months before Columbus received official backing for his fateful voyage across the Atlantic Ocean. Had Charles Martel suffered at Tours-Poitiers the fate of King Roderick at the Rio Barbate, it is doubtful that a "do-nothing" sovereign of the Merovingian realm could have later succeeded where his talented major domus had failed. Indeed, as Charles was the progenitor of the Carolingian line of Frankish rulers and grandfather of Charlemagne, one can even say with a degree of certainty that the subsequent history of the West would have proceeded along vastly different currents had ? Abd ar-Rahman been victorious at Tours-Poitiers in 732.^[10] ?

"The final camp of western historians believe that Tours was vastly overrated. This view is typified by Alessandro Barbero, who writes, "Today, historians tend to play down the significance of the battle of Poitiers, pointing out that the purpose of the Arab force defeated by Charles Martel was not to conquer the Frankish kingdom, but simply to pillage the wealthy monastery of St-Martin of Tours".^[11] Similarly, Toma? Mastnak writes:

? Modern historians have constructed a myth presenting this victory as having saved Christian Europe from the Muslims. Edward Gibbon, for example, called Charles Martel the savior of Christendom and the battle near Poitiers an encounter that changed the history of the world... This myth has survived well into our own times... Contemporaries of the battle, however, did not overstate its significance. The continuators of Fredegar's chronicle, who probably wrote in the mid-eighth century, pictured the battle as just one of many military encounters between Christians and Saracens - moreover, as only one in a series of wars

Ancestors of "James V" James

fought by Frankish princes for booty and territory... One of Fredegar's continuators presented the battle of Poitiers as what it really was: an episode in the struggle between Christian princes as the Carolingians strove to bring Aquitaine under their rule.[12] ?

"However, it is vital to note, when assessing Charles Martel's life, that even those historians who dispute the significance of this one battle as the event that saved Christianity, do not dispute that Martel himself had a huge effect on western history. Modern military historian Victor Davis Hanson acknowledges the debate on this battle, citing historians both for and against its macrohistorical placement:

?Recent scholars have suggested Poitiers, so poorly recorded in contemporary sources, was a mere raid and thus a construct of western mythmaking or that a Muslim victory might have been preferable to continued Frankish dominance. What is clear is that Poitiers marked a general continuance of the successful defense of Europe, (from the Muslims). Flush from the victory at Tours, Charles Martel went on to clear southern France from Islamic attackers for decades, unify the warring kingdoms into the foundations of the Carolingian Empire, and ensure ready and reliable troops from local estates.".[13] ?

Battle

"The Battle of Tours probably took place somewhere between Tours and Poitiers (hence its other name: Battle of Poitiers). The Frankish army, under Charles Martel, consisted mostly of veteran infantry, somewhere between 15,000 and 75,000 men. While Charles had some cavalry, they did not have stirrups, so he had them dismount and reinforce his phalanx. Odo and his Aquitanian nobility were also normally cavalry, but they also dismounted at the battle's onset, to buttress the phalanx. Responding to the Umayyad invasion, the Franks had avoided the old Roman roads, hoping to take the invaders by surprise. Martel believed it was absolutely essential that he not only take the Umayyads by surprise, but that he be allowed to select the ground on which the battle would be fought, ideally a high, wooded plain where the Islamic horsemen, already tired from carrying armour, would be further exhausted charging uphill. Further, the woods would aid the Franks in their defensive square by partially impeding the ability of the Umayyad horsemen to make a clear charge.

"From the Muslim accounts of the battle, they were indeed taken by surprise to find a large force opposing their expected sack of Tours, and they waited for six days, scouting the enemy and summoning all their raiding parties so their full strength was present for the battle. Emir Abdul Rahman was an able general who did not like the unknown at all, and he did not like charging uphill against an unknown number of foes who seemed well-disciplined and well-disposed for battle. But the weather was also a factor. The Germanic Franks, in their wolf and bear pelts, were more used to the cold, better dressed for it, and despite not having tents, which the Muslims did, were prepared to wait as long as needed, the autumn only growing colder.

"On the seventh day, the Umayyad army, mostly Berber and Arab horsemen and led by Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, attacked. During the battle, the Franks defeated the Islamic army and the emir was killed. While Western accounts are sketchy, Arab accounts are fairly detailed in describing how the Franks formed a large square and fought a brilliant defensive battle. Rahman had doubts before the battle that his men were ready for such a struggle, and should have had them abandon the loot which hindered them, but instead decided to trust his horsemen, who had never failed him. Indeed, it was thought impossible for infantry of that age to withstand armoured cavalry.

"Martel managed to inspire his men to stand firm against a force which must have seemed invincible to them, huge mailed horsemen, who, in addition, probably vastly outnumbered the Franks. In one of the rare instances where medieval infantry stood up against cavalry charges, the disciplined Frankish soldiers withstood the assaults even though, according to Arab sources, the Umayyad cavalry several times broke into the interior of the Frankish square. The scene is described in Bishop Isidore of Beja's Chronicle (translated passage

Ancestors of "James V" James

from FordhamUniversity's Internet Medieval Source Book):

"And in the shock of the battle the men of the North seemed like a sea that cannot be moved. Firmly they stood, one close to another, forming as it were a bulwark of ice; and with great blows of their swords they hewed down the Arabs. Drawn up in a band around their chief, the people of the Austrasians carried all before them. Their tireless hands drove their swords down to the breasts of the foe."

"Both accounts agree that the Umayyad forces had broken into the square and were trying to kill Martel, whose liege men had surrounded him and would not be broken, when a trick Charles had planned before the battle bore fruit beyond his wildest dreams. Both Western and Muslim accounts of the battle agree that sometime during the height of the fighting, with the battle still in grave doubt, scouts sent by Martel to the Muslim camp began freeing prisoners. Fearing loss of their plunder, a large portion of the Muslim army abandoned the battle and returned to camp to protect their spoils. In attempting to stop what appeared to be a retreat, Abdul Rahman was surrounded and killed by the Franks, and what started as a ruse ended up a real retreat, as the Umayyad army fled the field that day. The Franks resumed their phalanx, and rested in place through the night, believing the battle would resume at dawn of the following morning.

"The next day, when the Umayyad army did not renew the battle, the Franks feared an ambush. Charles at first believed the Muslims were attempting to lure him down the hill and into the open, a tactic he would resist at all costs. Only after extensive reconnaissance by Frankish soldiers of the Umayyad camp—which by both accounts had been so hastily abandoned that even the tents remained, as the Umayyad forces headed back to Iberia with what spoils remained that they could carry—was it discovered that the Muslims had retreated during the night. As the Arab Chronicles would later reveal, the generals from the different parts of the Caliphate, Berbers, Arabs, Persians and many more, had been unable to agree on a leader to take Abd er Rahman's place as Emir, or even to agree on a commander to lead them the following day. Only the Emir, Abd er Rahman, had a Fatwa from the Caliph, and thus absolute authority over the faithful under arms. With his death, and with the varied nationalities and ethnicities present in an army drawn from all over the Caliphate, politics, racial and ethnic bias, and personalities reared their head. The inability of the bickering generals to select anyone to lead resulted in the wholesale withdrawal of an army that might have been able to resume the battle and defeat the Franks.

"Martel's ability to have Abd er Rahman killed through a clever ruse he had carefully planned to cause confusion, at the battle's apex, and his years spent rigorously training his men, combined to do what was thought impossible: Martel's Franks, virtually all heavy infantry, withstood both mailed heavy cavalry with 20 foot lances, and bow-wielding light cavalry, without the aid of bows or firearms.[4] This was a feat of war almost unheard of in medieval history, a feat which even the heavily armored Roman legions proved themselves incapable of against the Parthians,[14] and left Martel a unique place in history as the savior of Europe[15] and a brilliant general in an age not known for its generalship.

After Tours

"In the subsequent decade, Charles led the Frankish army against the eastern duchies, Bavaria and Alemannia, and the southern duchies, Aquitaine and Provence. He dealt with the ongoing conflict with the Frisians and Saxons to his northeast with some success, but full conquest of the Saxons and their incorporation into the Frankish empire would wait for his grandson Charlemagne, primarily because Martel concentrated the bulk of his efforts against Muslim expansion.

"So instead of concentrating on conquest to his east, he continued expanding Frankish authority in the west, and denying the Emirate of Córdoba a foothold in Europe beyond Al-Andalus. After his victory at Tours, Martel continued on in campaigns in 736 and 737 to drive other Muslim armies from bases in Gaul after they again attempted to get a foothold in Europe beyond Al-Andalus.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Wars from 732-737

"Between his victory of 732 and 735, Charles reorganized the kingdom of Burgundy, replacing the counts and dukes with his loyal supporters, thus strengthening his hold on power. He was forced, by the ventures of Radbod, duke of the Frisians (719-734), son of the Duke Aldegisel who had accepted the missionaries Willibrord and Boniface, to invade independence-minded Frisia again in 734. In that year, he slew the duke, who had expelled the Christian missionaries, in the battle of the Boarn and so wholly subjugated the populace (he destroyed every pagan shrine) that the people were peaceful for twenty years after.

"The dynamic changed in 735 because of the death of Odo the Great, who had been forced to acknowledge, albeit reservedly, the suzerainty of Charles in 719. Though Charles wished to unite the duchy directly to himself and went there to elicit the proper homage of the Aquitanians, the nobility proclaimed Odo's son, Hunold, whose dukedom Charles recognised when the Umayyads invaded Provence the next year, and who equally was forced to acknowledge Charles as overlord as he had no hope of holding off the Muslims alone.

"This naval Arab invasion was headed by Abdul Rahman's son. It landed in Narbonne in 736 and moved at once to reinforce Arles and move inland. Charles temporarily put the conflict with Hunold on hold, and descended on the Provençal strongholds of the Umayyads. In 736, he took Montfrin and Avignon, and Arles and Aix-en-Provence with the help of Liutprand, King of the Lombards. Nîmes, Agde, and Béziers, held by Islam since 725, fell to him and their fortresses were destroyed. He crushed one Umayyad army at Arles, as that force sallied out of the city, and then took the city itself by a direct and brutal frontal attack, and burned it to the ground to prevent its use again as a stronghold for Umayyad expansion. He then moved swiftly and defeated a mighty host outside of Narbonne at the River Berre, but failed to take the city. Military historians believe he could have taken it, had he chosen to tie up all his resources to do so? but he believed his life was coming to a close, and he had much work to do to prepare for his sons to take control of the Frankish realm. A direct frontal assault, such as took Arles, using rope ladders and rams, plus a few catapults, simply was not sufficient to take Narbonne without a horrific loss of life for the Franks, troops Martel felt he could not lose. Nor could he spare years to starve the city into submission, years he needed to set up the administration of an empire his heirs would reign over. He left Narbonne therefore, isolated and surrounded, and his son would return to liberate it for Christianity. Provence, however, he successfully rid of its foreign occupiers, and crushed all foreign armies able to advance Islam further.

"Notable about these campaigns was Charles' incorporation, for the first time, of heavy cavalry with stirrups to augment his phalanx. His ability to coordinate infantry and cavalry veterans was unequalled in that era and enabled him to face superior numbers of invaders, and to decisively defeat them again and again. Some historians believe the Battle against the main Muslim force at the River Berre, near Narbonne, in particular was as important a victory for Christian Europe as Tours. In *Barbarians, Marauders, and Infidels*, Antonio Santosuosso, Professor Emeritus of History at the University of Western Ontario, and considered an expert historian in the era indisputably, puts forth an interesting modern opinion on Martel, Tours, and the subsequent campaigns against Rahman's son in 736-737. Santosuosso presents a compelling case that these later defeats of invading Muslim armies were at least as important as Tours in their defence of Western Christendom and the preservation of Western monasticism, the monasteries of which were the centers of learning which ultimately led Europe out of her Middle Ages. He also makes a compelling argument, after studying the Arab histories of the period, that these were clearly armies of invasion, sent by the Caliph not just to avenge Tours, but to begin the conquest of Christian Europe and bring it into the Caliphate.

"Further, unlike his father at Tours, Rahman's son in 736-737 knew that the Franks were a real power, and that Martel personally was a force to be reckoned with. He had no intention

Ancestors of "James V" James

of allowing Martel to catch him unawares and dictate the time and place of battle, as his father had, and concentrated instead on seizing a substantial portion of the coastal plains around Narbonne in 736 and heavily reinforced Arles as he advanced inland. They planned from there to move from city to city, fortifying as they went, and if Martel wished to stop them from making a permanent enclave for expansion of the Caliphate, he would have to come to them, in the open, where, he, unlike his father, would dictate the place of battle. All worked as he had planned, until Martel arrived, albeit more swiftly than the Moors believed he could call up his entire army. Unfortunately for Rahman's son, however, he had overestimated the time it would take Martel to develop heavy cavalry equal to that of the Muslims. The Caliphate believed it would take a generation, but Martel managed it in five short years. Prepared to face the Frankish phalanx, the Muslims were totally unprepared to face a mixed force of heavy cavalry and infantry in a phalanx. Thus, Charles again championed Christianity and halted Muslim expansion into Europe, as the window was closing on Islamic ability to do so. These defeats, plus those at the hands of Leo in Anatolia were the last great attempt at expansion by the Umayyad Caliphate before the destruction of the dynasty at the Battle of the Zab, and the ending of the Caliphate forever, especially the utter destruction of the Umayyad army at River Berre near Narbonne in 737.

Interregnum

"In 737, at the tail end of his campaigning in Provence and Septimania, the king, Theuderic IV, died. Martel, titling himself *maior domus* and *princeps et dux Francorum*, did not appoint a new king and nobody acclaimed one. The throne lay vacant until Martel's death. As the historian Charles Oman says (*The Dark Ages*, pg 297), "he cared not for name or style so long as the real power was in his hands."

"Gibbon has said Martel was "content with the titles of Mayor or Duke of the Franks, but he deserved to become the father of a line of kings," which he did. Gibbon also says of him, "in the public danger, he was summoned by the voice of his country."

"The interregnum, the final four years of Charles' life, was more peaceful than most of it had been and much of his time was now spent on administrative and organisational plans to create a more efficient state. Though, in 738, he compelled the Saxons of Westphalia to do him homage and pay tribute, and in 739 checked an uprising in Provence, the rebels being under the leadership of Maurontus. Charles set about integrating the outlying realms of his empire into the Frankish church. He erected four dioceses in Bavaria (Salzburg, Regensburg, Freising, and Passau) and gave them Boniface as archbishop and metropolitan over all Germany east of the Rhine, with his seat at Mainz. Boniface had been under his protection from 723 on; indeed the saint himself explained to his old friend, Daniel of Winchester, that without it he could neither administer his church, defend his clergy, nor prevent idolatry. It was Boniface who had defended Charles most stoutly for his deeds in seizing ecclesiastical lands to pay his army in the days leading to Tours, as one doing what he must to defend Christianity. In 739, Pope Gregory III begged Charles for his aid against Liutprand, but Charles was loathe to fight his onetime ally and ignored the Papal plea. Nonetheless, the Papal applications for Frankish protection showed how far Martel had come from the days he was tottering on excommunication, and set the stage for his son and grandson literally to rearrange Italy to suit the Papacy, and protect it.

Death

Tomb of Charles Martel, Basilique Saint-Denis.

"Charles Martel died on October 22, 741, at Quierzy-sur-Oise in what is today the Aisne d'Épartement in the Picardy region of France. He was buried at Saint Denis Basilica in Paris. His territories were divided among his adult sons a year earlier: to Carloman he gave Austrasia and Alemannia (with Bavaria as a vassal), to Pippin the Younger Neustria and Burgundy (with Aquitaine as a vassal), and to Grifo nothing, though some sources indicate he intended to give him a strip of land between Neustria and Austrasia.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"Gibbon called him "the hero of the age" and declared "Christendom ...delivered ... by the genius and good fortune of one man, Charles Martel." A strong argument can be made that Gibbon was correct on both counts.

Legacy

"At the beginning of Charles Martel's career, he had many internal opponents and felt the need to appoint his own kingly claimant, Clotaire IV. By his end, however, the dynamics of rulership in Francia had changed, no hallowed Merovingian was needed, neither for defence nor legitimacy: Charles divided his realm between his sons without opposition (though he ignored his young son Bernard). In between, he strengthened the Frankish state by consistently defeating, through superior generalship, the host of hostile foreign nations which beset it on all sides, including the heathen Saxons, which his grandson Charlemagne would fully subdue, and Moors, which he halted on a path of continental domination.

"Though he never cared about titles, his son Pippin did, and finally asked the Pope "who should be King, he who has the title, or he who has the power?" The Pope, highly dependent on Frankish armies for his independence from Lombard and Byzantine power (the Byzantine emperor still considered himself to be the only legitimate "Roman Emperor", and thus, ruler of all of the provinces of the ancient empire, whether recognised or not), declared for "he who had the power" and immediately crowned Pippin.

"Decades later, in 800, Pippin's son Charlemagne was crowned emperor by the Pope, further extending the principle by delegitimising the nominal authority of the Byzantine emperor in the Italian peninsula (which had, by then, shrunk to encompass little more than Apulia and Calabria at best) and ancient Roman Gaul, including the Iberian outposts Charlemagne had established in the Marca Hispanica across the Pyrenees, what today forms Catalonia. In short, though the Byzantine Emperor claimed authority over all the old Roman Empire, as the legitimate "Roman" Emperor, it was simply not reality. The bulk of the Western Roman Empire had come under Carolingian rule, the Byzantine Emperor having had almost no authority in the West since the sixth century, though Charlemagne, a consummate politician, preferred to avoid an open breach with Constantinople. An institution unique in history was being born: the Holy Roman Empire. Though the sardonic Voltaire ridiculed its nomenclature, saying that the Holy Roman Empire was "neither Holy, nor Roman, nor an Empire," it constituted an enormous political power for a time, especially under the Saxon and Salian dynasties and, to a lesser extent, the Hohenstaufen. It lasted until 1806, by then it was a nonentity. Though his grandson became its first emperor, the "empire" such as it was, was largely born during the reign of Charles Martel.

"Charles was that rarest of commodities in the Middle Ages: a brilliant strategic general, who also was a tactical commander of excellence, able in the heat of battle to adapt his plans to his foe's forces and movement? and amazingly, to defeat them repeatedly, especially when, as at Tours, they were far superior in men and weaponry, and at Berre and Narbonne, when they were superior in numbers of fighting men. Charles had the last quality which defines genuine greatness in a military commander: he foresaw the dangers of his foes, and prepared for them with care; he used ground, time, place, and fierce loyalty of his troops to offset his foe's superior weaponry and tactics; third, he adapted, again and again, to the enemy on the battlefield, shifting to compensate for the unforeseen and unforeseeable.

"Gibbon, whose tribute to Martel has been noted, was not alone among the great mid era historians in fervently praising Martel; Thomas Arnold ranks the victory of Charles Martel even higher than the victory of Arminius in the Battle of the Teutoburg Forest in its impact on all of modern history:

"Charles Martel's victory at Tours was among those signal deliverances which have affected for centuries the happiness of mankind." [History of the later Roman Commonwealth, vol ii. p. 317.]

Ancestors of "James V" James

"German historians are especially ardent in their praise of Martel and in their belief that he saved Europe and Christianity from the all-conquering Islam, praising him also for driving back the ferocious Saxon barbarians on his borders. Schlegel speaks of this "mighty victory" in terms of fervent gratitude, and tells how "the arm of Charles Martel saved and delivered the Christian nations of the West from the deadly grasp of all-destroying Islam", and Ranke points out,

"as one of the most important epochs in the history of the world, the commencement of the eighth century, when on the one side Mohammedanism threatened to overspread Italy and Gaul, and on the other the ancient idolatry of Saxony and Friesland once more forced its way across the Rhine. In this peril of Christian institutions, a youthful prince of Germanic race, Karl Martell, arose as their champion, maintained them with all the energy which the necessity for self-defence calls forth, and finally extended them into new regions."

"In 1922 and 1923, Belgian historian Henri Pirenne published a series of papers, known collectively as the "Pirenne Thesis", which remain influential to this day. Pirenne held that the Roman Empire continued, in the Frankish realms, up until the time of the Arab conquests in the 7th century. These conquests disrupted Mediterranean trade routes leading to a decline in the European economy. Such continued disruption would have meant complete disaster except for Charles Martel's halting of Islamic expansion into Europe from 732 on. What he managed to preserve led to the Carolingian Renaissance, named after him.

"Professor Santosuosso[7] perhaps sums up Martel best when he talks about his coming to the rescue of his Christian allies in Provence, and driving the Muslims back into the Iberian Peninsula forever in the mid and late 730's::

"After assembling forces at Saragossa the Muslims entered French territory in 735, crossed the River Rhone and captured and looted Arles. From there they struck into the heart of Provence, ending with the capture of Avignon, despite strong resistance. Islamic forces remained in French territory for about four years, carrying raids to Lyon, Burgundy, and Piedmont. Again Charles Martel came to the rescue, reconquering most of the lost territories in two campaigns in 736 and 739, except for the city of Narbonne, which finally fell in 759. This second (Muslim) expedition was probably more dangerous than the first to Poitiers. Yet its failure (at Martel's hands) put an end to any serious Muslim expedition across the Pyrenees (forever)."

"In the Netherlands, a vital part of the Carolingian Empire, and in the low countries, he is considered a hero. In France and Germany, he is revered as a hero of epic proportions.

"Skilled as an administrator and ruler, Martel organized what would become the medieval European government: a system of fiefdoms, loyal to barons, counts, dukes and ultimately the King, or in his case, simply maior domus and princeps et dux Francorum. ('First or Dominant Mayor and Prince of the Franks') His close coordination of church with state began the medieval pattern for such government. He created what would become the first western standing army since the fall of Rome by his maintaining a core of loyal veterans around which he organized the normal feudal levies. In essence, he changed Europe from a horde of barbarians fighting with one another, to an organized state.

Beginning of the Reconquista

"Although it took another two generations for the Franks to drive all the Arab garrisons out of Septimania and across the Pyrenees, Charles Martel's halt of the invasion of French soil turned the tide of Islamic advances, and the unification of the Frankish kingdoms under Martel, his son Pippin the Younger, and his grandson Charlemagne created a western power which prevented the Emirate of Córdoba from expanding over the Pyrenees. Martel, who in 732 was on the verge of excommunication, instead was recognised by the Church as its paramount defender. Pope Gregory II wrote him more than once, asking his protection and aid,[16] and he remained, till his death, fixated on stopping the Muslims. Martel's son Pippin the Younger kept his father's promise and returned and took Narbonne by siege in

Ancestors of "James V" James

759, and his grandson, Charlemagne, actually established the Marca Hispanica across the Pyrenees in part of what today is Catalonia, reconquering Girona in 785 and Barcelona in 801. This sector of what is now Spain was then called "The Moorish Marches" by the Carolingians, who saw it as not just a check on the Muslims in Hispania, but the beginning of taking the entire country back. This formed a permanent buffer zone against Islam, which became the basis, along with the King of Asturias, named Pelayo (718-737, who started his fight against the Moors in the mountains of Covadonga, 722) and his descendants, for the Reconquista until all of the Muslims were eradicated from the Iberian Peninsula.

Military legacy

Heavy infantry and permanent army

"Victor Davis Hanson argues that Charles Martel launched 'the thousand year struggle' between European heavy infantry, and Muslim cavalry.[17] Of course, Martel is also the father of heavy cavalry in Europe, as he integrated heavy armoured cavalry into his forces. This creation of a real army would continue all through his reign, and that of his son, Pepin the Short, until his Grandson, Charlemagne, would possess the world's largest and finest army since the peak of Rome.[18] Equally, the Muslims used infantry - indeed, at the Battle of Toulouse most of their forces were light infantry. It was not till Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi brought a huge force of Arab and Berber cavalry with him when he assumed the emirate of Al-Andalus that the Muslim forces became primarily cavalry.

"Martel's army was known primarily for being the first standing permanent army since Rome's fall in 476, and for the core of tough, seasoned heavy infantry who stood so stoutly at Tours. The Frankish infantry wore as much as 70 pounds of armour, including their heavy wooden shields with an iron boss. Standing close together, and well disciplined, they were unbreakable at Tours.[19] Martel had taken the money and property he had seized from the church and paid local nobles to supply trained ready infantry year round. This was the core of veterans who served with him on a permanent basis, and as Hanson says, "provided a steady supply of dependable troops year around." This was the first permanent army since Rome. "[18] While other Germanic cultures, such as the Visigoths or Vandals, had a proud martial tradition, and the Franks themselves had an annual muster of militarily aged men, such tribes were only able to field armies around planting and harvest. It was Martel's creation of a system whereby he could call on troops year round that gave the Carolingians the first standing and permanent army since Rome's fall in the west.

"And, first and foremost, Charles Martel will always be remembered for his victory at Tours. Creasy argues that the Martel victory 'preserved the relics of ancient and the germs of modern civilizations.' Gibbon called those eight days in 732, the week leading up to Tours, and the battle itself, 'the events that rescued our ancestors of Britain, and our neighbors of Gaul [France], from the civil and religious yoke of the Koran.' Paul Akers, in his editorial on Charles Martel, says for those who value Christianity 'you might spare a minute sometime today, and every October, to say a silent thank you to a gang of half-savage Germans and especially to their leader, Charles The Hammer Martel.' [20]

"In his vision of what would be necessary for him to withstand a larger force and superior technology (the Muslim horsemen had adopted the armour and accoutrements of heavy cavalry from the Sassanid Warrior Class, which made the first knights possible), he, daring not to send his few horsemen against the Islamic cavalry, used his army to fight in a formation used by the ancient Greeks to withstand superior numbers and weapons by discipline, courage, and a willingness to die for their cause: a phalanx. He had trained a core of his men year round, using mostly Church funds, and some had literally been with him since his earliest days after his father's death. It was this hardcore of disciplined veterans that won the day for him at Tours. Hanson emphasizes that Martel's greatest accomplishment as a General may have been his ability to keep his troops under control. This absolute iron discipline saved his infantry from the fate of so many infantrymen - such as the Saxons at Hastings - who broke formation and were slaughtered piecemeal. After using this infantry force by itself at Tours, he studied the foe's forces and further adapted to them, initially using

Ancestors of "James V" James

stirrups and saddles recovered from the foe's deadhorses, and armour from the dead horsemen.

Development of heavy cavalry

"After 732, he began the integration into his army of heavy cavalry, using the armour and accoutrements of heavy armoured horsemen, training his infantry to fight in conjunction with cavalry, a tactic which stood him in good stead during his campaigns of 736-737, especially at the Battle of Narbonne. His incorporation of heavy armoured cavalry into the western forces created the first "knights" in the west.

Brilliant generalship

"Martel earned his reputation for brilliant generalship, in an age generally bereft of same, by his ability to use what he had and by integrating new ideas and technology. As a consequence, he was undefeated from 716 to his death against a wide range of opponents, including the Muslim cavalry (at that time, the world's best) and the fierce barbarian Saxons on his own borders -- and all this in spite of virtually always being outnumbered. He was the only general in the Middle Ages in Europe to use the eastern battle technique of feigned retreat. His ability to attack where he was least expected and when he was least expected was legendary. The process of the development of the famous chivalry of France continued in the Edict of Pistres of his great-great-grandson and namesake Charles the Bald.

"The defeats Martel inflicted on the Muslims were vital in that they split in the Islamic world left the Caliphate unable to mount an all-out attack on Europe via its Iberian stronghold after 750. His ability to meet this challenge, until the Muslims self-destructed, is considered by most historians to be of macrohistorical importance, and is why Dante writes of him in Heaven as one of the "Defenders of the Faith." After 750, the door to western Europe, the Iberian emirate, was in the hands of the Umayyads, while most of the remainder of the Muslim world came under the control of the Abbasids, making an invasion of Europe a logistical impossibility while the two Muslim empires battled. This put off Islamic invasion of Europe until the Turkish conquest of the Balkans half a millennium later.

"H. G. Wells says of Charles Martel's decisive defeat of the Muslims in his "Short History of the World:

"The Moslim when they crossed the Pyrenees in 720 found this Frankish kingdom under the practical rule of Charles Martel, the Mayor of the Palace of a degenerate descendant of Clovis, and experienced the decisive defeat of Poitiers (732) at his hands. This Charles Martel was practically overlord of Europe north of the Alps from the Pyrenees to Hungary." [21]

John H. Haaren says in "Famous Men of the Middle Ages?"

"The battle of Tours, or Poitiers, as it should be called, is regarded as one of the decisive battles of the world. It decided that Christians, and not Moslems, should be the ruling power in Europe. Charles Martel is especially celebrated as the hero of this battle."

"Just as his grandson, Charlemagne, would become famous for his swift and unexpected movements in his campaigns, Charles was legendary for never doing what his enemies forecast he would do. It was this ability to do the unforeseen, and move far faster than his opponents believed he could, that characterized the military career of Charles Martel.

"It is notable that the Northmen did not begin their European raids until after the death of Martel's grandson, Charlemagne. They had the naval capacity to begin those raids at least three generations earlier, but chose not to challenge Martel, his son Pippin, or his grandson, Charlemagne. This was probably fortunate for Martel, who despite his enormous gifts, would probably not have been able to repel the Vikings in addition to the Muslims, Saxons, and

Ancestors of "James V" James

everyone else hedeated. However, it is notable that again, despite the ability to doso, (the Danes had constructed defenses to defend from counterattacksby land, and had the ability to launch their wholesale sea raids asearly as Martel's reign), they chose not to challenge Charles Martel.

Conclusion

"J.M. Roberts says of Charles Martel in his note on the Carolingianson page 315 of his 1993 History of the World:

'It (the Carolingian line) produced Charles Martel, the soldier whoturned the Arabs back at Tours, and the supporter of Saint Boniface,the Evangelizer of Germany. This is a considerable double mark to haveleft on the history of Europe.'

"Gibbon perhaps summarized Charles Martel's legacy most eloquently: 'na laborious administration of 24 years he had restored and supportedthe dignity of the throne..by the activity of a warrior who in thesame campaign could display his banner on the Elbe, the Rhone, andshores of the ocean.'

Family and children

"Charles Martel married twice:

"His first wife was Rotrude of Treves, (690-724) (daughter of St.Leutwinus, Bishop of Treves). They had the following children:

- * Hiltrud (d. 754), married Odilo I, Duke of Bavaria
- * Carloman
- * Landrade (Landres), married Sigrand, Count of Hesbania
- * Auda, Aldana, or Alane, married Thierry IV, Count of Autun andToulouse
- * Pippin the Short

"His second wife was Swanhild. They had the following child:

- * Grifo

"Charles Martel also had a mistress, Ruodhaid. They had the followingchildren:

- * Bernard (b. before 732-787)
- * Hieronymus
- * Remigius, archbishop of Rouen (d. 771)
- * Ian (d. 783)

Sources:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_Martel

1. ^ e. the Fat so. 2001. The Encyclopedia of World History
2. ^ "Charles Martel". Catholic Encyclopedia. (1913). New York:Robert Appleton Company.
3. ^ More information can be found in Louis deMartelly's book,"Charles Martel and theLance of Destiny." [1]
4. ^ a b Battle of Tours - Britannica Online Encyclopedia
5. ^ Fouracre, John. ?The Age of Charles Martel
6. ^ Davis1999, p. 104.
7. ^ a b Santosuosso, Anthony . Barbarians, Marauders, andInfidels2004
8. ^ Poke's Fifteen Decisive Battles
9. ^ An Islamic Europe?, Tomorrow's World, Volume 8, No 3. ; AnIslamic Europe?
10. ^ Watson, William, E. (1993). The Battle of Tours-PoitiersRevisited. Providence: Studies in Western Civilization v.2 n.1.

Ancestors of "James V" James

11. ^ Barbero, 2004, p. 10.
12. ^ Mastnak, 2002, pp. 99-100.
13. ^ Hanson, Victor Davis, 2001, p. 167.
14. ^ Cassius Dio ? Book 40
15. ^ Home Page
16. ^ Medieval Sourcebook: Pope Gregory II - Appeal to Charles Martel
17. ^ Hanson, 2001, p. 141-166.
18. ^ a b Bennett, Michael. Fighting Techniques of the Medieval World
19. ^ Hanson, 2001, p. 154.
20. ^ Fredericksburg.com - Why Islam didn't conquer the world I vs.From the plains of medieval France to the modern Mideast, militantMuslims test Christians and Jews
21. ^ 45. The Development of Latin Christendom. Wells, H.G. 1922. AShort History of the World

196 **Gor "Sea King" Thorrasson** was born about 400 AD in Kvenland, Finland.
300
339
2.

196 **Cenred** (son of Ceolwald and UNNAMED) was born in 644 AD in Wessex, England. He
304 married **UNNAMED**.
896
0.

196 **UNNAMED** was born in 648 AD.

304
896 Notes for Cenred:
1.

Cenred did not rule, though is was the father of King Ina (or Ine) and Ingild, Prince of Wessex.

Source: 'Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700,' seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1.

199 **Charles "The Hammer" Martel** (son of "Pepin II of Herista" Pipin and Alpaide Chalpaide)
655 was born on Aug 23, 686 AD in Austrasia, France. He died on Oct 22, 741 AD in Quierzy,
692 Austrasia. He married "**Rotrude of Treves**" **Rotrude**.
8.

199 "**Rotrude of Treves**" **Rotrude** was born in 690 AD in 724.

655
692 Notes for Charles "The Hammer" Martel:
9.

Charles 'the Hammer' Martel (August 23, 686 ? October 22, 741) is the 45th great grandfather of my Westmoreland grandchildren, children of my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe, and her husband, Steven O. Westmoreland, through whom the Martel line comes.

"He was proclaimed Mayor of the Palace and ruled the Franks in the name of a titular King. Late in his reign he proclaimed himself Duke of the Franks (the last four years of his reign he did not even bother with the facade of a King) and by any name was de facto ruler of the Frankish Realms. In 739 he was offered an office of Roman consul by the Pope, which he rejected[1] possibly not to conflict with Theodatus Ursus who already occupied the office by appointment of the Byzantine emperor Leo III the Isaurian. He expanded his rule over all three of the Frankish kingdoms: Austrasia, Neustria and Burgundy. Martel was born in Herstal, in present-day Belgium, the illegitimate son of Pippin the Middle and his concubine Alpaide (or Chalpaide).[2] He was described by Louis Gustave and Charles Strauss in their

Ancestors of "James V" James

book "Moslem and Frank; or, Charles Martel and the rescue of Europe" as a tall, powerfully built man, who was more agile than his size would lead one to believe.

"He is best remembered for winning the Battle of Tours in 732, which has traditionally been characterized as an event that halted the Islamic expansionism in Europe that had conquered Iberia.[3]" Charles's victory has often been regarded as decisive for world history, since it preserved western Europe from Muslim conquest and Islamization." [4]

"In addition to being the leader of the army that prevailed at Tours, Charles Martel was a truly giant figure of the Middle Ages. A brilliant general, he is considered the forefather of western heavy cavalry, chivalry, founder of the Carolingian Empire (which was named after him), and a catalyst for the feudal system, which would see Europe through the Middle Ages. Although some recent scholars have suggested he was more of a beneficiary of the feudal system than a knowing agent for social change, others continue to see him as the primary catalyst for the feudal system." [5]

"The following tale is told of Charles, and the origins of his name: in 686, Pippin II and his wife Plectrude were talking together in a room when they were intruded upon by a messenger, bringing news that the Mayor's mistress, Alpaida, had given birth to a son at Herstal. The messenger, fearful of arousing the wrath of Plectrude, decided not to announce the news directly. Instead, he said: "Long live the king, it is a carl" ('man'). Pippin, equally cautious of his wife, dismissed the messenger as follows: "A carl, is it? Then let him be called that." This was done, and, so legend claims, the child was named "Carl". Alpaida also bore Pippin another son, Childebrand.

"In December 714, Pippin the Middle (Pippin II) died. Prior to his death, he had, at his wife Plectrude's urging, designated Theudoald, his grandson by their son Grimoald, his heir in the entire realm. This was immediately opposed by the nobles because Theudoald was a child of only eight years of age. To prevent Charles using this unrest to his own advantage, Plectrude had him gaoled (jailed) in Cologne, the city which was destined to be her capital. This prevented an uprising on his behalf in Austrasia, but not in Neustria

"In 715, the Neustrian nobles proclaimed Ragenfrid mayor of their palace on behalf of, and apparently with the support of, Dagobert III, the young king, who in theory had the legal authority to select a mayor, though by this time the Merovingian dynasty had lost most such powers.

"The Austrasians were not to be left supporting a woman and her young son for long. Before the end of the year, Charles Martel had escaped from prison and been acclaimed mayor by the nobles of that kingdom. The Neustrians had been attacking Austrasia and the nobles were waiting for a strong man to lead them against their invading countrymen. That year, Dagobert died and the Neustrians proclaimed Chilperic II king without the support of the rest of the Frankish people.

"In 716, Chilperic and Ragenfrid together led an army into Austrasia. The Neustrians allied with another invading force under Radbod, King of the Frisians and met Charles in battle near Cologne, which was still held by Plectrude. Charles had little time to gather men, or prepare, and the result was his only defeat. According to Strauss and Gustave, Martel fought a brilliant battle, but realized he could not prevail because he was outnumbered so badly, and retreated. In fact, he fled the field as soon as he realized he did not have the time or the men to prevail, retreating to the mountains of the Eifel to gather men, and train them. The king and his mayor then turned to besiege their other rival in the city and took it and the treasury, and received the recognition of both Chilperic as king and Ragenfrid as mayor. Plectrude surrendered on Theudoald's behalf.

Magnanimous in victory

"At this juncture, however, events turned in favour of Charles. Having made the proper preparations, he fell upon the triumphant army near Malmedy as it was returning to its own

Ancestors of "James V" James

province, and, in the ensuing Battle of Amblève, routed it and it fled. Several things were notable about this battle, in which Charles set the pattern for the remainder of his military career: First, he appeared where his enemies least expected him, while they were marching triumphantly home and far outnumbered him. He also attacked when least expected, at midday, when armies of that era traditionally were resting. Finally, he attacked them how they least expected it, by feigning a retreat to draw his opponents into a trap. The feigned retreat, next to unknown in Western Europe at that time? it was a traditionally eastern tactic? required both extraordinary discipline on the part of the troops and exact timing on the part of their commander. Charles, in this battle, had begun demonstrating the military genius that would mark his rule, in that he never attacked his enemies where, when, or how they expected, and the result was an unbroken victory streak that lasted until his death.

"In Spring 717, Charles returned to Neustria with an army and confirmed his supremacy with a victory at the Battle of Vincy, near Cambrai. He chased the fleeing king and mayor to Paris, before turning back to deal with Plectrude and Cologne. He took her city and dispersed her adherents. However, he allowed both Plectrude and the young Theudoald to live and treated them with kindness? unusual for those Dark Ages, when mercy to a former jailer, or a potential rival, was rare. On this success, he proclaimed Clotaire IV king of Austrasia in opposition to Chilperic and deposed the archbishop of Rheims, Rigobert, replacing him with Milo, a lifelong supporter.

Consolidation of power

"After subjugating all Austrasia, he marched against Radbod and pushed him back into his territory, even forcing the concession of West Frisia (later Holland). He also sent the Saxons back over the Weser and thus secured his borders? in the name of the new king Clotaire, of course. In 718, Chilperic responded to Charles' new ascendancy by making an alliance with Odo the Great (or Eudes, as he is sometimes known), the duke of Aquitaine, who had made himself independent during the civil war in 715, but was again defeated, at the Battle of Soissons, by Charles. The king fled with his ducal ally to the lands south of the Loire and Ragenfrid fled to Angers. Soon Clotaire IV died and Odo gave up on Chilperic and, in exchange for recognising his dukedom, surrendered the king to Charles, who recognised his kingship over all the Franks in return for legitimate royal affirmation of his mayoralty, likewise over all the kingdoms (718).

Foreign wars from 718-732

"The ensuing years were full of strife. Between 718 and 723, Charles secured his power through a series of victories: he won the loyalty of several important bishops and abbots (by donating lands and money for the foundation of abbeys such as Echternach), he subjugated Bavaria and Alemannia, and he defeated the pagan Saxons.

"Having unified the Franks under his banner, Charles was determined to punish the Saxons who had invaded Austrasia. Therefore, late in 718, he laid waste their country to the banks of the Weser, the Lippe, and the Ruhr. He defeated them in the Teutoburg Forest. In 719, Charles seized West Frisia without any great resistance on the part of the Frisians, who had been subjects of the Franks but had seized control upon the death of Pippin. Although Charles did not trust the pagans, their ruler, Aldegisel, accepted Christianity, and Charles sent Willibrord, bishop of Utrecht, the famous 'Apostle to the Frisians' to convert the people. Charles also did much to support Winfrid, later Saint Boniface, the "Apostle of the Germans."

"When Chilperic II died the following year (720), Charles appointed as his successor the son of Dagobert III, Theuderic IV, who was still a minor, and who occupied the throne from 720 to 737. Charles was now appointing the kings whom he supposedly served, *rois fainéants* who were mere puppets in his hands; by the end of his reign they were so useless that he didn't even bother appointing one. At this time, Charles again marched against the Saxons. Then the Neustrians rebelled under Ragenfrid, who had been left the county of Anjou. They were easily defeated (724), but Ragenfrid gave up his sons as hostages in return for keeping his county. This ended the civil wars of Charles' reign.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"The next six years were devoted in their entirety to assuring Frankish authority over the dependent Germanic tribes. Between 720 and 723, Charles was fighting in Bavaria, where the Agilolfing dukes had gradually evolved into independent rulers, recently in alliance with Liutprand the Lombard. He forced the Alemanni to accompany him, and Duke Hugbert submitted to Frankish suzerainty. In 725 and 728, he again entered Bavaria and the ties of lordship seemed strong. From his first campaign, he brought back the Agilolfing princess Swanachild, who apparently became his concubine. In 730, he marched against Lantfrid, duke of Alemannia, who had also become independent, and killed him in battle. He forced the Alemanni capitulation to Frankish suzerainty and did not appoint a successor to Lantfrid. Thus, southern Germany once more became part of the Frankish kingdom, as had northern Germany during the first years of the reign.

"By 730, his own realm secure, Charles began to prepare exclusively for the coming storm from the south and west.

"In 721, the emir of Córdoba had built up a strong army from Morocco, Yemen, and Syria to conquer Aquitaine, the large duchy in the southwest of Gaul, nominally under Frankish sovereignty, but in practice almost independent in the hands of the Odo the Great, the Duke of Aquitaine, since the Merovingian kings had lost power. The invading Muslims besieged the city of Toulouse, then Aquitaine's most important city, and Odo (also called Eudes, or Eudo) immediately left to find help. He returned three months later just before the city was about to surrender and defeated the Muslim invaders on June 9, 721, at what is now known as the Battle of Toulouse. This critical defeat was essentially the result of a classic enveloping movement by Odo's forces. (After Odo originally fled, the Muslims became overconfident and, instead of maintaining strong outer defenses around their siege camp and continuous scouting, they did neither.) Thus, when Odo returned, he was able to launch a near complete surprise attack on the besieging force, scattering it at the first attack, and slaughtering units caught resting or that fled without weapons or armour.

"Due to the situation in Iberia, Martel believed he needed a virtually fulltime army -- one he could train intensely -- as a core of veteran Franks who would be augmented with the usual conscripts called up in time of war. (During the Early Middle Ages, troops were only available after the crops had been planted and before harvesting time.) To train the kind of infantry that could withstand the Muslim heavy cavalry, Charles needed them year-round, and he needed to pay them so their families could buy the food they would have otherwise grown. To obtain money he seized church lands and property, and used the funds to pay his soldiers. The same Charles who had secured the support of the ecclesia by donating land, seized some of it back between 724 and 732. Of course, Church officials were enraged, and, for a time, it looked as though Charles might even be excommunicated for his actions. But then came a significant invasion.

Eve of Tours

"Historian Paul K. Davis said in *100 Decisive Battles* Having defeated Eudes, he turned to the Rhine to strengthen his northeastern borders - but in 725 was diverted south with the activity of the Muslims in Aquitaine.' Martel then concentrated his attention to the Umayyads, virtually for the remainder of his life.[6] Indeed, 12 years later, when he had thrice rescued Gaul from Umayyad invasions, Antonio Santosuosso noted when he destroyed an Umayyad army sent to reinforce the invasion forces of the 735 campaigns, "Charles Martel again came to the rescue".[7] It has been noted that Charles Martel could have pursued the wars against the Saxons? but he was determined to prepare for what he thought was a greater danger.

"It is also vital to note that the Muslims were not aware, at that time, of the true strength of the Franks, or the fact that they were building a real army instead of the typical barbarian hordes that had infested Europe after Rome's fall. They considered the Germanic tribes, including the Franks, simply barbarians and were not particularly concerned about them. The Arab Chronicles, the history of that age, show that Arab awareness of the Franks as a

Ancestors of "James V" James

growing military power came only after the Battle of Tours when the Caliph expressed shock at his army's catastrophic defeat.

Battle of Tours

Main article Battle of Tours.

Leadup and importance

"It was under one of their ablest and most renowned commanders, with a veteran army, and with every apparent advantage of time, place, and circumstance, that the Arabs made their great effort at the conquest of Europe north of the Pyrenees." [8]

Edward Shepherd Creasy, *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World*

"The Cordoban emirate had previously invaded Gaul and had been stopped in its northward sweep at the Battle of Toulouse, in 721. The hero of that less celebrated event had been Odo the Great, Duke of Aquitaine, who was not the progenitor of a race of kings and patron of chroniclers. It has previously been explained how Odo defeated the invading Muslims, but when they returned, things were far different. The arrival in the interim of a new emir of Cordoba, Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, who brought with him a huge force of Arabs and Berber horsemen, triggered a far greater invasion. Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi had been at Toulouse, and the Arab Chronicles make clear he had strongly opposed the Emir's decision not to secure outer defenses against a relief force, which allowed Odo and his relief force to attack with impunity before the Islamic cavalry could assemble or mount. Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi had no intention of permitting such a disaster again. This time the Umayyad horsemen were ready for battle, and the results were horrific for the Aquitanians. Odo, hero of Toulouse, was badly defeated in the Muslim invasion of 732 at the battle prior to the Muslim sacking of Bordeaux, and when he gathered a second army, at the Battle of the River Garonne? where the western chroniclers state, "God alone knows the number of the slain"? and the city of Bordeaux was sacked and looted. Odo fled to Charles, seeking help. Charles agreed to come to Odo's rescue, provided Odo acknowledged Charles and his house as his overlords, which Odo did formally at once. Thus, Odo faded into history while Charles marched into it. It is interesting to note that Charles was pragmatic; while most commanders would never use their enemies in battle, Odo and his remaining Aquitanian nobles formed the right flank of Charles' forces at Tours.

"The Battle of Tours earned Charles the cognomen "Martel" ('Hammer'), for the merciless way he hammered his enemies. Many historians, including the great military historian Sir Edward Creasy, believe that had he failed at Tours, Islam would probably have overrun Gaul, and perhaps the remainder of western Christian Europe. Gibbon made clear his belief that the Umayyad armies would have conquered from Rome to the Rhine, and even England, having the English Channel for protection, with ease, had Martel not prevailed. Creasy said "the great victory won by Charles Martel ... gave a decisive check to the career of Arab conquest in Western Europe, rescued Christendom from Islam, [and] preserved the relics of ancient and the germs of modern civilization." Gibbon's belief that the fate of Christianity hinged on this battle is echoed by other historians including John B. Bury, and was very popular for most of modern historiography. It fell somewhat out of style in the twentieth century, when historians such as Bernard Lewis contended that Arabs had little intention of occupying northern France. More recently, however, many historians have tended once again to view the Battle of Tours as a very significant event in the history of Europe and Christianity. Equally, many, such as William Watson, still believe this battle was one of macrohistorical world-changing importance, if they do not go so far as Gibbon does rhetorically.

"In the modern era, Matthew Bennett and his co-authors of "Fighting Techniques of the Medieval World", published in 2005, argue that "few battles are remembered 1,000 years after they are fought...but the Battle of Poitiers, (Tours) is an exception...Charles Martel turned back a Muslim raid that had it been allowed to continue, might have conquered Gaul."

Ancestors of "James V" James

Michael Grant, author of "History of Rome", grants the Battle of Tours such importance that he lists it in the macrohistorical dates of the Roman era.

"It is important to note however that modern western historians, military historians, and writers, essentially fall into three camps. The first, those who believe Gibbon was right in his assessment that Martel saved Christianity and western civilization by this Battle are typified by Bennett, Paul Davis, Robert Martin, and educationalist Dexter B. Wakefield who writes in *An Islamic Europe*:

A Muslim France? Historically, it nearly happened. But as a result of Martel's fierce opposition, which ended Muslim advances and set the stage for centuries of war thereafter, Islam moved no farther into Europe. European schoolchildren learn about the Battle of Tours in much the same way that American students learn about Valley Forge and Gettysburg. [9] ?

"The second camp of contemporary historians believe that a failure by Martel at Tours could have been a disaster, destroying what would become western civilization after the Renaissance. Certainly all historians agree that no power would have remained in Europe able to halt Islamic expansion had the Franks failed. William E. Watson, one of the most respected historians of this era, strongly supports Tours as a macrohistorical event, but distances himself from the rhetoric of Gibbon and Drubeck, writing, for example, of the battle's importance in Frankish, and world, history in 1993:

? There is clearly some justification for ranking Tours-Poitiers among the most significant events in Frankish history when one considers the result of the battle in light of the remarkable record of the successful establishment by Muslims of Islamic political and cultural dominance along the entire eastern and southern rim of the former Christian, Roman world. The rapid Muslim conquest of Palestine, Syria, Egypt and the North African coast all the way to Morocco in the seventh century resulted in the permanent imposition by force of Islamic culture onto a previously Christian and largely non-Arab base. The Visigothic kingdom fell to Muslim conquerors in a single battle on the Rio Barbate in 711, and the Hispanic Christian population took seven long centuries to regain control of the Iberian Peninsula. The Reconquista, of course, was completed in 1492, only months before Columbus received official backing for his fateful voyage across the Atlantic Ocean. Had Charles Martel suffered at Tours-Poitiers the fate of King Roderick at the Rio Barbate, it is doubtful that a "do-nothing" sovereign of the Merovingian realm could have later succeeded where his talented major domus had failed. Indeed, as Charles was the progenitor of the Carolingian line of Frankish rulers and grandfather of Charlemagne, one can even say with a degree of certainty that the subsequent history of the West would have proceeded along vastly different currents had Abd ar-Rahman been victorious at Tours-Poitiers in 732. [10] ?

"The final camp of western historians believe that Tours was vastly overrated. This view is typified by Alessandro Barbero, who writes, "Today, historians tend to play down the significance of the battle of Poitiers, pointing out that the purpose of the Arab force defeated by Charles Martel was not to conquer the Frankish kingdom, but simply to pillage the wealthy monastery of St-Martin of Tours". [11] Similarly, Toma? Mastnak writes:

? Modern historians have constructed a myth presenting this victory as having saved Christian Europe from the Muslims. Edward Gibbon, for example, called Charles Martel the savior of Christendom and the battle near Poitiers an encounter that changed the history of the world... This myth has survived well into our own times... Contemporaries of the battle, however, did not overstate its significance. The continuators of Fredegar's chronicle, who probably wrote in the mid-eighth century, pictured the battle as just one of many military encounters between Christians and Saracens - moreover, as only one in a series of wars fought by Frankish princes for booty and territory... One of Fredegar's continuators presented the battle of Poitiers as what it really was: an episode in the struggle between Christian princes as the Carolingians strove to bring Aquitaine under their rule. [12]

?

Ancestors of "James V" James

"However, it is vital to note, when assessing Charles Martel's life, that even those historians who dispute the significance of this one battle as the event that saved Christianity, do not dispute that Martel himself had a huge effect on western history. Modern military historian Victor Davis Hanson acknowledges the debate on this battle, citing historians both for and against its macrohistorical placement:

Recent scholars have suggested Poitiers, so poorly recorded in contemporary sources, was a mere raid and thus a construct of western mythmaking or that a Muslim victory might have been preferable to continued Frankish dominance. What is clear is that Poitiers marked a general continuance of the successful defense of Europe, (from the Muslims). Flush from the victory at Tours, Charles Martel went on to clear southern France from Islamic attackers for decades, unify the warring kingdoms into the foundations of the Carolingian Empire, and ensure ready and reliable troops from local estates." [13] ?

Battle

"The Battle of Tours probably took place somewhere between Tours and Poitiers (hence its other name: Battle of Poitiers). The Frankish army, under Charles Martel, consisted mostly of veteran infantry, somewhere between 15,000 and 75,000 men. While Charles had some cavalry, they did not have stirrups, so he had them dismount and reinforce his phalanx. Odo and his Aquitanian nobility were also normally cavalry, but they also dismounted at the battle's onset, to buttress the phalanx. Responding to the Umayyad invasion, the Franks had avoided the old Roman roads, hoping to take the invaders by surprise. Martel believed it was absolutely essential that he not only take the Umayyads by surprise, but that he be allowed to select the ground on which the battle would be fought, ideally a high, wooded plain where the Islamic horsemen, already tired from carrying armour, would be further exhausted charging uphill. Further, the woods would aid the Franks in their defensive square by partially impeding the ability of the Umayyad horsemen to make a clear charge.

"From the Muslim accounts of the battle, they were indeed taken by surprise to find a large force opposing their expected sack of Tours, and they waited for six days, scouting the enemy and summoning all their raiding parties so their full strength was present for the battle. Emir Abdul Rahman was an able general who did not like the unknown at all, and he did not like charging uphill against an unknown number of foes who seemed well-disciplined and well-disposed for battle. But the weather was also a factor. The Germanic Franks, in their wolf and bear pelts, were more used to the cold, better dressed for it, and despite not having tents, which the Muslims did, were prepared to wait as long as needed, the autumn only growing colder.

"On the seventh day, the Umayyad army, mostly Berber and Arab horsemen and led by Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi, attacked. During the battle, the Franks defeated the Islamic army and the emir was killed. While Western accounts are sketchy, Arab accounts are fairly detailed in describing how the Franks formed a large square and fought a brilliant defensive battle. Rahman had doubts before the battle that his men were ready for such a struggle, and should have had them abandon the loot which hindered them, but instead decided to trust his horsemen, who had never failed him. Indeed, it was thought impossible for infantry of that age to withstand armoured cavalry.

"Martel managed to inspire his men to stand firm against a force which must have seemed invincible to them, huge mailed horsemen, who, in addition, probably vastly outnumbered the Franks. In one of the rare instances where medieval infantry stood up against cavalry charges, the disciplined Frankish soldiers withstood the assaults even though, according to Arab sources, the Umayyad cavalry several times broke into the interior of the Frankish square. The scene is described in Bishop Isidore of Beja's Chronicle (translated passage from Fordham University's Internet Medieval Source Book):

"And in the shock of the battle the men of the North seemed like a sea that cannot be moved. Firmly they stood, one close to another, forming as it were a bulwark of ice; and with

Ancestors of "James V" James

great blows of their swords they hewed down the Arabs. Drawn up in a band around their chief, the people of the Austrasians carried all before them. Their tireless hands drove their swords down to the breasts of the foe."

"Both accounts agree that the Umayyad forces had broken into the square and were trying to kill Martel, whose liege men had surrounded him and would not be broken, when a trick Charles had planned before the battle bore fruit beyond his wildest dreams. Both Western and Muslim accounts of the battle agree that sometime during the height of the fighting, with the battle still in grave doubt, scouts sent by Martel to the Muslim camp began freeing prisoners. Fearing loss of their plunder, a large portion of the Muslim army abandoned the battle and returned to camp to protect their spoils. In attempting to stop what appeared to be a retreat, Abdul Rahman was surrounded and killed by the Franks, and what started as a ruse ended up a real retreat, as the Umayyad army fled the field that day. The Franks resumed their phalanx, and rested in place through the night, believing the battle would resume at dawn of the following morning.

"The next day, when the Umayyad army did not renew the battle, the Franks feared an ambush. Charles at first believed the Muslims were attempting to lure him down the hill and into the open, a tactic he would resist at all costs. Only after extensive reconnaissance by Frankish soldiers of the Umayyad camp—which by both accounts had been so hastily abandoned that even the tents remained, as the Umayyad forces headed back to Iberia with what spoils remained that they could carry—was it discovered that the Muslims had retreated during the night. As the Arab Chronicles would later reveal, the generals from the different parts of the Caliphate, Berbers, Arabs, Persians and many more, had been unable to agree on a leader to take Abd er Rahman's place as Emir, or even to agree on a commander to lead them the following day. Only the Emir, Abd er Rahman, had a Fatwa from the Caliph, and thus absolute authority over the faithful under arms. With his death, and with the varied nationalities and ethnicities present in an army drawn from all over the Caliphate, politics, racial and ethnic bias, and personalities reared their head. The inability of the bickering generals to select anyone to lead resulted in the wholesale withdrawal of an army that might have been able to resume the battle and defeat the Franks.

"Martel's ability to have Abd er Rahman killed through a clever ruse he had carefully planned to cause confusion, at the battle's apex, and his years spent rigorously training his men, combined to do what was thought impossible: Martel's Franks, virtually all heavy infantry, withstood both mailed heavy cavalry with 20 foot lances, and bow-wielding light cavalry, without the aid of bows or firearms.[4] This was a feat of war almost unheard of in medieval history, a feat which even the heavily armored Roman legions proved themselves incapable of against the Parthians,[14] and left Martel a unique place in history as the savior of Europe[15] and a brilliant general in an age not known for its generalship.

After Tours

"In the subsequent decade, Charles led the Frankish army against the eastern duchies, Bavaria and Alemannia, and the southern duchies, Aquitaine and Provence. He dealt with the ongoing conflict with the Frisians and Saxons to his northeast with some success, but full conquest of the Saxons and their incorporation into the Frankish empire would wait for his grandson Charlemagne, primarily because Martel concentrated the bulk of his efforts against Muslim expansion.

"So instead of concentrating on conquest to his east, he continued expanding Frankish authority in the west, and denying the Emirate of Córdoba a foothold in Europe beyond Al-Andalus. After his victory at Tours, Martel continued on in campaigns in 736 and 737 to drive other Muslim armies from bases in Gaul after they again attempted to get a foothold in Europe beyond Al-Andalus.

Wars from 732-737

"Between his victory of 732 and 735, Charles reorganized the kingdom of Burgundy,

Ancestors of "James V" James

replacing the counts and dukes with his loyal supporters, thus strengthening his hold on power. He was forced, by the ventures of Radbod, duke of the Frisians (719-734), son of the Duke Aldegisel who had accepted the missionaries Willibrord and Boniface, to invade independence-minded Frisia again in 734. In that year, he slew the duke, who had expelled the Christian missionaries, in the battle of the Boarn and so wholly subjugated the populace (he destroyed every pagan shrine) that the people were peaceful for twenty years after.

"The dynamic changed in 735 because of the death of Odo the Great, who had been forced to acknowledge, albeit reservedly, the suzerainty of Charles in 719. Though Charles wished to unite the duchy directly to himself and went there to elicit the proper homage of the Aquitainians, the nobility proclaimed Odo's son, Hunold, whose dukedom Charles recognised when the Umayyads invaded Provence the next year, and who equally was forced to acknowledge Charles as overlord as he had no hope of holding off the Muslims alone.

"This naval Arab invasion was headed by Abdul Rahman's son. It landed in Narbonne in 736 and moved at once to reinforce Arles and move inland. Charles temporarily put the conflict with Hunold on hold, and descended on the Provençal strongholds of the Umayyads. In 736, he took Montfrin and Avignon, and Arles and Aix-en-Provence with the help of Liutprand, King of the Lombards. Nîmes, Agde, and Béziers, held by Islam since 725, fell to him and their fortresses were destroyed. He crushed one Umayyad army at Arles, as that force sallied out of the city, and then took the city itself by a direct and brutal frontal attack, and burned it to the ground to prevent its use again as a stronghold for Umayyad expansion. He then moved swiftly and defeated a mighty host outside of Narbonne at the River Berre, but failed to take the city. Military historians believe he could have taken it, had he chosen to tie up all his resources to do so? but he believed his life was coming to a close, and he had much work to do to prepare for his sons to take control of the Frankish realm. A direct frontal assault, such as took Arles, using rope ladders and rams, plus a few catapults, simply was not sufficient to take Narbonne without horrific loss of life for the Franks, troops Martel felt he could not lose. Nor could he spare years to starve the city into submission, years he needed to set up the administration of an empire his heirs would reign over. He left Narbonne therefore, isolated and surrounded, and his son would return to liberate it for Christianity. Provence, however, he successfully rid of its foreign occupiers, and crushed all foreign armies able to advance Islam further.

"Notable about these campaigns was Charles' incorporation, for the first time, of heavy cavalry with stirrups to augment his phalanx. His ability to coordinate infantry and cavalry veterans was unequalled in that era and enabled him to face superior numbers of invaders, and to decisively defeat them again and again. Some historians believe the Battle against the main Muslim force at the River Berre, near Narbonne, in particular was as important a victory for Christian Europe as Tours. In *Barbarians, Marauders, and Infidels*, Antonio Santosuosso, Professor Emeritus of History at the University of Western Ontario, and considered an expert historian in the era indisputable, puts forth an interesting modern opinion on Martel, Tours, and the subsequent campaigns against Rahman's son in 736-737. Santosuosso presents a compelling case that these later defeats of invading Muslim armies were at least as important as Tours in their defence of Western Christendom and the preservation of Western monasticism, the monasteries of which were the centers of learning which ultimately led Europe out of her Middle Ages. He also makes a compelling argument, after studying the Arab histories of the period, that these were clearly armies of invasion, sent by the Caliph not just to avenge Tours, but to begin the conquest of Christian Europe and bring it into the Caliphate.

"Further, unlike his father at Tours, Rahman's son in 736-737 knew that the Franks were a real power, and that Martel personally was a force to be reckoned with. He had no intention of allowing Martel to catch him unawares and dictate the time and place of battle, as his father had, and concentrated instead on seizing a substantial portion of the coastal plains around Narbonne in 736 and heavily reinforced Arles as he advanced inland. They planned from there to move from city to city, fortifying as they went, and if Martel wished to

Ancestors of "James V" James

stop them from making a permanent enclave for expansion of the Caliphate, he would have to come to them, in the open, where, he, unlike his father, would dictate the place of battle. All worked as he had planned, until Martel arrived, albeit more swiftly than the Moors believed he could call up his entire army. Unfortunately for Rahman's son, however, he had overestimated the time it would take Martel to develop heavy cavalry equal to that of the Muslims. The Caliphate believed it would take a generation, but Martel managed it in five short years. Prepared to face the Frankish phalanx, the Muslims were totally unprepared to face a mixed force of heavy cavalry and infantry in a phalanx. Thus, Charles again championed Christianity and halted Muslim expansion into Europe, as the window was closing on Islamic ability to do so. These defeats, plus those at the hands of Leo in Anatolia were the last great attempt at expansion by the Umayyad Caliphate before the destruction of the dynasty at the Battle of the Zab, and the ending of the Caliphate forever, especially the utter destruction of the Umayyad army at River Berre near Narbonne in 737.

Interregnum

"In 737, at the tail end of his campaigning in Provence and Septimania, the king, Theuderic IV, died. Martel, titling himself maior domus and princeps et dux Francorum, did not appoint a new king and nobody acclaimed one. The throne lay vacant until Martel's death. As the historian Charles Oman says (*The Dark Ages*, pg 297), "he cared not for name or style so long as the real power was in his hands."

"Gibbon has said Martel was "content with the titles of Mayor or Duke of the Franks, but he deserved to become the father of a line of kings," which he did. Gibbon also says of him, "in the public danger, he was summoned by the voice of his country."

"The interregnum, the final four years of Charles' life, was more peaceful than most of it had been and much of his time was now spent on administrative and organisational plans to create a more efficient state. Though, in 738, he compelled the Saxons of Westphalia to do him homage and pay tribute, and in 739 checked an uprising in Provence, the rebels being under the leadership of Maurontus. Charles set about integrating the outlying realms of his empire into the Frankish church. He erected four dioceses in Bavaria (Salzburg, Regensburg, Freising, and Passau) and gave them Boniface as archbishop and metropolitan over all Germany east of the Rhine, with his seat at Mainz. Boniface had been under his protection from 723 on; indeed the saint himself explained to his old friend, Daniel of Winchester, that without it he could neither administer his church, defend his clergy, nor prevent idolatry. It was Boniface who had defended Charles most stoutly for his deeds in seizing ecclesiastical lands to pay his army in the days leading to Tours, as one doing what he must to defend Christianity. In 739, Pope Gregory III begged Charles for his aid against Liutprand, but Charles was loathe to fight his one-time ally and ignored the Papal plea. Nonetheless, the Papal applications for Frankish protection showed how far Martel had come from the days he was tottering on excommunication, and set the stage for his son and grandson literally to rearrange Italy to suit the Papacy, and protect it.

Death

Tomb of Charles Martel, Basilique Saint-Denis.

"Charles Martel died on October 22, 741, at Quierzy-sur-Oise in what is today the Aisne d'Épartement in the Picardy region of France. He was buried at Saint Denis Basilica in Paris. His territories were divided among his adult sons a year earlier: to Carloman he gave Austrasia and Alemannia (with Bavaria as a vassal), to Pippin the Younger Neustria and Burgundy (with Aquitaine as a vassal), and to Grifo nothing, though some sources indicate he intended to give him a strip of land between Neustria and Austrasia.

"Gibbon called him "the hero of the age" and declared "Christendom ... delivered ... by the genius and good fortune of one man, Charles Martel." A strong argument can be made that Gibbon was correct on both counts.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Legacy

"At the beginning of Charles Martel's career, he had many internal opponents and felt the need to appoint his own kingly claimant, Clotaire IV. By his end, however, the dynamics of rulership in Francia had changed, no hallowed Merovingian was needed, neither for defence nor legitimacy: Charles divided his realm between his sons without opposition (though he ignored his young son Bernard). In between, he strengthened the Frankish state by consistently defeating, through superior generalship, the host of hostile foreign nations which beset it on all sides, including the heathen Saxons, which his grandson Charlemagne would fully subdue, and Moors, which he halted on a path of continental domination.

"Though he never cared about titles, his son Pippin did, and finally asked the Pope "who should be King, he who has the title, or he who has the power?" The Pope, highly dependent on Frankish armies for his independence from Lombard and Byzantine power (the Byzantine emperor still considered himself to be the only legitimate "Roman Emperor", and thus, ruler of all of the provinces of the ancient empire, whether recognised or not), declared for "he who had the power" and immediately crowned Pippin.

"Decades later, in 800, Pippin's son Charlemagne was crowned emperor by the Pope, further extending the principle by delegitimising the nominal authority of the Byzantine emperor in the Italian peninsula (which had, by then, shrunk to encompass little more than Apulia and Calabria at best) and ancient Roman Gaul, including the Iberian outposts Charlemagne had established in the Marca Hispanica across the Pyrenees, what today forms Catalonia. In short, though the Byzantine Emperor claimed authority over all the old Roman Empire, as the legitimate "Roman" Emperor, it was simply not reality. The bulk of the Western Roman Empire had come under Carolingian rule, the Byzantine Emperor having had almost no authority in the West since the sixth century, though Charlemagne, a consummate politician, preferred to avoid an open breach with Constantinople. An institution unique in history was being born: the Holy Roman Empire. Though the sardonic Voltaire ridiculed its nomenclature, saying that the Holy Roman Empire was "neither Holy, nor Roman, nor an Empire," it constituted an enormous political power for a time, especially under the Saxon and Salian dynasties and, to a lesser extent, the Hohenstaufen. It lasted until 1806, by then it was a nonentity. Though his grandson became its first emperor, the "empire" such as it was, was largely born during the reign of Charles Martel.

"Charles was that rarest of commodities in the Middle Ages: a brilliant strategic general, who also was a tactical commander of excellence, able in the heat of battle to adapt his plans to his foe's forces and movement? and amazingly, to defeat them repeatedly, especially when, as at Tours, they were far superior in men and weaponry, and at Berre and Narbonne, when they were superior in numbers of fighting men. Charles had the last quality which defines genuine greatness in a military commander: he foresaw the dangers of his foes, and prepared for them with care; he used ground, time, place, and fierce loyalty of his troops to offset his foe's superior weaponry and tactics; third, he adapted, again and again, to the enemy on the battlefield, shifting to compensate for the unforeseen and unforeseeable.

"Gibbon, whose tribute to Martel has been noted, was not alone among the great mid era historians in fervently praising Martel; Thomas Arnold ranks the victory of Charles Martel even higher than the victory of Arminius in the Battle of the Teutoburg Forest in its impact on all of modern history:

"Charles Martel's victory at Tours was among those signal deliverances which have affected for centuries the happiness of mankind." [History of the later Roman Commonwealth, vol ii. p. 317.]

"German historians are especially ardent in their praise of Martel and in their belief that he saved Europe and Christianity from the all-conquering Islam, praising him also for driving back the ferocious Saxon barbarians on his borders. Schlegel speaks of this "mighty victory" in terms of fervent gratitude, and tells how "the arm of Charles Martel saved and delivered

Ancestors of "James V" James

the Christian nations of the West from the deadly grasp of all-destroying Islam", and Ranke points out,

"as one of the most important epochs in the history of the world, the commencement of the eighth century, when on the one side Mohammedanism threatened to overspread Italy and Gaul, and on the other the ancient idolatry of Saxony and Friesland once more forced its way across the Rhine. In this peril of Christian institutions, a youthful prince of Germanic race, Karl Martell, arose as their champion, maintained them with all the energy which the necessity for self-defence calls forth, and finally extended them into new regions."

"In 1922 and 1923, Belgian historian Henri Pirenne published a series of papers, known collectively as the "Pirenne Thesis", which remain influential to this day. Pirenne held that the Roman Empire continued, in the Frankish realms, up until the time of the Arab conquests in the 7th century. These conquests disrupted Mediterranean trade routes leading to a decline in the European economy. Such continued disruption would have meant complete disaster except for Charles Martel's halting of Islamic expansion into Europe from 732 on. What he managed to preserve led to the Carolingian Renaissance, named after him.

"Professor Santosuosso[7] perhaps sums up Martel best when he talks about his coming to the rescue of his Christian allies in Provence, and driving the Muslims back into the Iberian Peninsula forever in the mid and late 730's::

"After assembling forces at Saragossa the Muslims entered French territory in 735, crossed the River Rhone and captured and looted Arles. From there they struck into the heart of Provence, ending with the capture of Avignon, despite strong resistance. Islamic forces remained in French territory for about four years, carrying raids to Lyon, Burgundy, and Piedmont. Again Charles Martel came to the rescue, reconquering most of the lost territories in two campaigns in 736 and 739, except for the city of Narbonne, which finally fell in 759. This second (Muslim) expedition was probably more dangerous than the first to Poitiers. Yet its failure (at Martel's hands) put an end to any serious Muslim expedition across the Pyrenees (forever)."

"In the Netherlands, a vital part of the Carolingian Empire, and in the low countries, he is considered a hero. In France and Germany, he is revered as a hero of epic proportions.

"Skilled as an administrator and ruler, Martel organized what would become the medieval European government: a system of fiefdoms, loyal to barons, counts, dukes and ultimately the King, or in his case, simply maior domus and princeps et dux Francorum. ('First or Dominant Mayor and Prince of the Franks') His close coordination of church with state began the medieval pattern for such government. He created what would become the first western standing army since the fall of Rome by his maintaining a core of loyal veterans around which he organized the normal feudal levies. In essence, he changed Europe from a horde of barbarians fighting with one another, to an organized state.

Beginning of the Reconquista

"Although it took another two generations for the Franks to drive all the Arab garrisons out of Septimania and across the Pyrenees, Charles Martel's halt of the invasion of French soil turned the tide of Islamic advances, and the unification of the Frankish kingdoms under Martel, his son Pippin the Younger, and his grandson Charlemagne created a western power which prevented the Emirate of Córdoba from expanding over the Pyrenees. Martel, who in 732 was on the verge of excommunication, instead was recognised by the Church as its paramount defender. Pope Gregory II wrote him more than once, asking his protection and aid,[16] and he remained, till his death, fixated on stopping the Muslims. Martel's son Pippin the Younger kept his father's promise and returned and took Narbonne by siege in 759, and his grandson, Charlemagne, actually established the Marca Hispanica across the Pyrenees in part of what today is Catalonia, reconquering Girona in 785 and Barcelona in 801. This sector of what is now Spain was then called "The Moorish Marches" by the Carolingians, who saw it as not just a check on the Muslims in Hispania, but the beginning

Ancestors of "James V" James

oftaking the entire country back. This formed a permanent buffer zone against Islam, which became the basis, along with the King of Asturias, named Pelayo (718-737, who started his fight against the Moors in the mountains of Covadonga, 722) and his descendants, for the Reconquista until all of the Muslims were eradicated from the Iberian Peninsula.

Military legacy

Heavy infantry and permanent army

"Victor Davis Hanson argues that Charles Martel launched 'the thousand year struggle' between European heavy infantry, and Muslim cavalry.[17] Of course, Martel is also the father of heavy cavalry in Europe, as he integrated heavy armoured cavalry into his forces. This creation of a real army would continue all through his reign, and that of his son, Pepin the Short, until his Grandson, Charlemagne, would possess the world's largest and finest army since the peak of Rome.[18] Equally, the Muslims used infantry - indeed, at the Battle of Toulouse most of their forces were light infantry. It was not till Abdul Rahman Al Ghafiqi brought a huge force of Arab and Berber cavalry with him when he assumed the emirate of Al-Andalus that the Muslim forces became primarily cavalry.

"Martel's army was known primarily for being the first standing permanent army since Rome's fall in 476, and for the core of tough, seasoned heavy infantry who stood so stoutly at Tours. The Frankish infantry wore as much as 70 pounds of armour, including their heavy wooden shields with an iron boss. Standing close together, and well disciplined, they were unbreakable at Tours.[19] Martel had taken the money and property he had seized from the church and paid local nobles to supply trained ready infantry year round. This was the core of veterans who served with him on a permanent basis, and as Hanson says, "provided a steady supply of dependable troops year around." This was the first permanent army since Rome. "[18] While other Germanic cultures, such as the Visigoths or Vandals, had a proud martial tradition, and the Franks themselves had an annual muster of military aged men, such tribes were only able to field armies around planting and harvest. It was Martel's creation of a system whereby he could call on troops year round that gave the Carolingians the first standing and permanent army since Rome's fall in the west.

"And, first and foremost, Charles Martel will always be remembered for his victory at Tours. Creasy argues that the Martel victory 'preserved the relics of ancient and the germs of modern civilizations.' Gibbon called those eight days in 732, the week leading up to Tours, and the battle itself, 'the events that rescued our ancestors of Britain, and our neighbors of Gaul [France], from the civil and religious yoke of the Koran.' Paul Akers, in his editorial on Charles Martel, says for those who value Christianity 'you might spare a minute sometime today, and every October, to say a silent thank you to a gang of half-savage Germans and especially to their leader, Charles The Hammer Martel.' [20]

"In his vision of what would be necessary for him to withstand a larger force and superior technology (the Muslim horsemen had adopted the armour and accoutrements of heavy cavalry from the Sassanid Warrior Class, which made the first knights possible), he, daring not to send his few horsemen against the Islamic cavalry, used his army to fight in a formation used by the ancient Greeks to withstand superior numbers and weapons by discipline, courage, and a willingness to die for their cause: a phalanx. He had trained a core of his men year round, using mostly Church funds, and some had literally been with him since his earliest days after his father's death. It was this hardcore of disciplined veterans that won the day for him at Tours. Hanson emphasizes that Martel's greatest accomplishment as a General may have been his ability to keep his troops under control. This absolute iron discipline saved his infantry from the fate of so many infantrymen - such as the Saxons at Hastings - who broke formation and were slaughtered piecemeal. After using this infantry force by itself at Tours, he studied the foe's forces and further adapted to them, initially using stirrups and saddles recovered from the foe's dead horses, and armour from the dead horsemen.

Development of heavy cavalry

Ancestors of "James V" James

"After 732, he began the integration into his army of heavy cavalry, using the armour and accoutrements of heavy armoured horsemen, training his infantry to fight in conjunction with cavalry, a tactic which stood him in good stead during his campaigns of 736-737, especially at the Battle of Narbonne. His incorporation of heavy armoured cavalry into the western forces created the first "knights" in the west.

Brilliant generalship

"Martel earned his reputation for brilliant generalship, in an age generally bereft of same, by his ability to use what he had and by integrating new ideas and technology. As a consequence, he was undefeated from 716 to his death against a wide range of opponents, including the Muslim cavalry (at that time, the world's best) and the fierce barbarian Saxons on his own borders -- and all this in spite of virtually always being outnumbered. He was the only general in the Middle Ages in Europe to use the eastern battle technique of feigned retreat. His ability to attack where he was least expected and when he was least expected was legendary. The process of the development of the famous chivalry of France continued in the Edict of Pistres of his great-great-grandson and namesake Charles the Bald.

"The defeats Martel inflicted on the Muslims were vital in that they split in the Islamic world left the Caliphate unable to mount an all-out attack on Europe via its Iberian stronghold after 750. His ability to meet this challenge, until the Muslims self-destructed, is considered by most historians to be of macrohistorical importance, and is why Dante writes of him in Heaven as one of the "Defenders of the Faith." After 750, the door to western Europe, the Iberian emirate, was in the hands of the Umayyads, while most of the remainder of the Muslim world came under the control of the Abbasids, making an invasion of Europe a logistical impossibility while the two Muslim empires battled. This put off Islamic invasion of Europe until the Turkish conquest of the Balkans half a millennium later.

"H. G. Wells says of Charles Martel's decisive defeat of the Muslims in his "Short History of the World:

"The Moslim when they crossed the Pyrenees in 720 found this Frankish kingdom under the practical rule of Charles Martel, the Mayor of the Palace of a degenerate descendant of Clovis, and experienced the decisive defeat of Poitiers (732) at his hands. This Charles Martel was practically overlord of Europe north of the Alps from the Pyrenees to Hungary." [21]

John H. Haaren says in "Famous Men of the Middle Ages?"

"The battle of Tours, or Poitiers, as it should be called, is regarded as one of the decisive battles of the world. It decided that Christians, and not Moslems, should be the ruling power in Europe. Charles Martel is especially celebrated as the hero of this battle."

"Just as his grandson, Charlemagne, would become famous for his swift and unexpected movements in his campaigns, Charles was legendary for never doing what his enemies forecast he would do. It was this ability to do the unforeseen, and move far faster than his opponents believed he could, that characterized the military career of Charles Martel.

"It is notable that the Northmen did not begin their European raids until after the death of Martel's grandson, Charlemagne. They had the naval capacity to begin those raids at least three generations earlier, but chose not to challenge Martel, his son Pippin, or his grandson, Charlemagne. This was probably fortunate for Martel, who despite his enormous gifts, would probably not have been able to repel the Vikings in addition to the Muslims, Saxons, and everyone else he defeated. However, it is notable that again, despite the ability to do so, (the Danes had constructed defenses to defend from counterattacks by land, and had the ability to launch their wholesale sea raids as early as Martel's reign), they chose not to challenge Charles Martel.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Conclusion

"J.M. Roberts says of Charles Martel in his note on the Carolingians on page 315 of his 1993 History of the World:

'It (the Carolingian line) produced Charles Martel, the soldier who turned the Arabs back at Tours, and the supporter of Saint Boniface, the Evangelizer of Germany. This is a considerable double mark to have left on the history of Europe.'

"Gibbon perhaps summarized Charles Martel's legacy most eloquently: 'In a laborious administration of 24 years he had restored and supported the dignity of the throne... by the activity of a warrior who in the same campaign could display his banner on the Elbe, the Rhone, and shores of the ocean.'

Family and children

"Charles Martel married twice:

"His first wife was Rotrude of Treves, (690-724) (daughter of St. Leutwinus, Bishop of Treves). They had the following children:

- * Hiltrud (d. 754), married Odilo I, Duke of Bavaria
- * Carloman
- * Landrade (Landres), married Sigrand, Count of Hesbania
- * Auda, Aldana, or Alane, married Thierry IV, Count of Autun and Toulouse
- * Pippin the Short

"His second wife was Swanhild. They had the following child:

- * Grifo

"Charles Martel also had a mistress, Ruodhaid. They had the following children:

- * Bernard (b. before 732-787)
- * Hieronymus
- * Remigius, archbishop of Rouen (d. 771)
- * Ian (d. 783)

Sources:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_Martel

1. ^ e. the Fat so. 2001. The Encyclopedia of World History
2. ^ "Charles Martel". Catholic Encyclopedia. (1913). New York: Robert Appleton Company.
3. ^ More information can be found in Louis de Martelly's book, "Charles Martel and the Lance of Destiny." [1]
4. ^ a b Battle of Tours - Britannica Online Encyclopedia
5. ^ Fouracre, John. ?The Age of Charles Martel
6. ^ Davis 1999, p. 104.
7. ^ a b Santosuosso, Anthony . Barbarians, Marauders, and Infidels 2004
8. ^ Poke's Fifteen Decisive Battles
9. ^ An Islamic Europe?, Tomorrow's World, Volume 8, No 3. ; An Islamic Europe?
10. ^ Watson, William, E. (1993). The Battle of Tours-Poitiers Revisited. Providence: Studies in Western Civilization v.2 n.1.
11. ^ Barbero, 2004, p. 10.
12. ^ Mastnak, 2002, pp. 99-100.
13. ^ Hanson, Victor Davis, 2001, p. 167.
14. ^ Cassius Dio ? Book 40

Ancestors of "James V" James

15. ^ Home Page
16. ^ Medieval Sourcebook: Pope Gregory II - Appeal to Charles Martel
17. ^ Hanson, 2001, p. 141-166.
18. ^ a b Bennett, Michael. Fighting Techniques of the Medieval World
19. ^ Hanson, 2001, p. 154.
20. ^ Fredericksburg.com - Why Islam didn't conquer the world I vs.From the plains of medieval France to the modern Mideast, militantMuslims test Christians and Jews
21. ^ 45. The Development of Latin Christendom. Wells, H.G. 1922. AShort History of the World

199 **Gor "Sea King" Thorasson** was born about 400 AD in Kvenland, Finland.
655
782
4.

199 **Cenred** (son of Ceolwald and UNNAMED) was born in 644 AD in Wessex, England. He
660 married **UNNAMED**.
339
2.

199 **UNNAMED** was born in 648 AD.
660
339 Notes for Cenred:
3.

Cenred did not rule, though is was the father of King Ina (or Ine) and Ingild, Prince of Wessex.

Source: 'Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came toAmerica before 1700,' seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., GenealogicalPublishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library ofCongress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1.

Generation 32

Arnulf De Heristal (son of "Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus and Oda) was born in 582 AD in Metz, Austrasia, France. He died on Aug 16, 640 AD in Metz, Austrasia, France. He married **Ode De Heristal** about 596 AD.

Ode De Heristal was born in 586 AD in Saxony, France. She died in 645 AD in Austrasia, France.

Notes for Arnulf De Heristal:

Saint Arnulf of Metz was born of an important Frankish family at an uncertain date around 582. In his younger years he was called to the Merovingian court to serve king Theudebert II (595-612) of Austrasia and as dux at the Scheldt. Later he became bishop of Metz. During his life he was attracted to religious life and he retired as a monk. After his death he was canonized as a saint. In the French language he is also known as Arnoul or Arnoulf.

Arnulf gave distinguished service at the Austrasian court under Theudebert II. After the death of Theudebert in 612 he was made bishop of Metz. The rule of Austrasia came into the hands of Brunhilda, the grandmother of Theudebert, who ruled also in Burgundy in the name of her great-grandchildren. In 613 Arnulf joined his politics with Pippin of Landen and led the opposition of Frankish nobles against Queen Brunhilda. The revolt led to her overthrow, torture, and eventual execution, and the subsequent reunification of Frankish lands under Chlothachar II.

Chlothachar later made his son Dagobert I king of Austrasia and he ruled with the help of his

Ancestors of "James V" James

advisor Arnulf. Not satisfied with his position, as a bishop he was involved in the murder of Chrodoald in 624, an important leader of the Frankish Agilolfings-family and aprotégé of Dagobert.

From 623 (with Pippin of Landen, then the Mayor of the Palace), Arnulf was an adviser to Dagobert I. He retired around 628 to a hermitage at a mountain site in the Vosges, to realize his lifelong resolution to become a monk and a hermit. His friend Romaric, whose parents were killed by Brunhilda, had preceded him to the mountains and together with Amatus had already established Remiremont Abbey there. Arnulf settled there, and remained there until his death twelve years later.

Arnulf was canonized as a saint by the Roman Catholic Church. In iconography, he is portrayed with a rake in his hand and is often confused in legend with Arnold of Soissons, who is a patron saint of brewing.

Shortly after 800, most likely in Metz, a brief genealogy of the Carolingians was compiled, modelled in style after the genealogy of Jesus in the New Testament. According to this source, Arnulf's father was a certain Arnoald, who in turn was the son of a nobilissimus Ansbert and Blithilt (or Blithilde), an alleged and otherwise unattested daughter of Chlothar I. This late attribution of royal Merovingian descent at a time when the Carolingian dynasty was at the peak of its power contrasts clearly with the contemporary *Vita Sancti Arnulfi's* failure to mention any such a connection: The *Vita*, written shortly after the saint's death, merely states that he was of Francish ancestry, from "sufficiently elevated and noble parentage, and very rich in worldly goods"[1], without making any claims to royal blood. While modern historians generally dismiss the later Carolingian genealogy as spurious[2], it constitutes an important link in Christian Settiani's suggested line of descent from antiquity via Flavius Afranius Syagrius.

Arnulf was married ca 596 to a woman who later sources give the name of Dode or Doda, born ca 584 and daughter of Arnoald and wife Oda (?), and had children. Chlodulf of Metz was his oldest son, but more important is his second son Ansegisel, who married Begga daughter of Pepin I, Pippin of Landen.

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arnulf_of_Metz

1. ^ *Vita Arnulfi* c. 1, MG. SS. rer. Merov. 2, p. 432.
2. ^ Cf. R. Schieffer, *Die Karolinger*, Verlag W. Kohlhammer, Stuttgart/ Berlin / Köln, 2nd ed., 1997.

* Alban Butler's *Lives of the Saints*, edited, revised and supplemented by Thurston and Attwater. Christian Classics, Westminster, Maryland.

* Christian Settiani - *La Préhistoire des Capétiens*, Première Partie.

"Pepin I of Brabant-Landen" Pepin was born in 585 AD in Austrasia, France. He died in 647 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Itta Idoberg**.

Itta Idoberg was born in 598 AD. She died in 642 AD.

Cuthwine (son of Ceawlin) was born in 564 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 568 AD.

Notes for Cuthwine:

King Cuthwine and his father, Ceawlin, joined forces in fighting the Britons in 577. They slew three kings and took the three cities of Gloucester, Cirencester and Bath. King Cuthwine was killed in battle in 584.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Source: Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700, seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1

That death date is subject to question, as the record we have of his three children all were born after 584. We suspect the death date is premature.

"Pepin II of Herista" Pipin (son of Ansegisel and "Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant) was born in 643 AD in Austrasia, France. He died on Dec 16, 714 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Alpaide Chalpaide**.

Alpaide Chalpaide was born in 657 AD in Paris, France. She died in 692 AD in Austrasia, France.

Notes for "Pepin II of Herista" Pipin:

Pipin was the 14th great grandfather of the husband of 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of my seventh great grandmother, Alice Carpenter.

"Pepin (also Pippin, Pipin, or Peppin) of Herstal (c. 635 ? 16 December 714) was the Mayor of the Palace of Austrasia from 680 to his death and of Neustria and Burgundy from 687 to 695. He was also the first mayor of the palace to "reign" as Duke and Prince of the Franks and he by far overshadowed the Merovingian rois fain Éants.

"Pepin, sometimes called Pepin II and Pepin the Middle was the grandson and namesake of Pepin I the Elder by the marriage of Pepin's daughter, Begga, and Ansegisel, son of Arnulf of Metz. That marriage, united the two houses of the Pippinids and the Arnulfings which, created what would be called the Carolingian dynasty. , Pepin II was, probably born in Herstal (HÉristal), modern Belgium (where his centre, of power lay), whence his by, name (sometimes "of Heristal").

"As mayor of Austrasia, Pepin and Martin, the duke of Laon, fought the Neustrian mayor Ebroin, who had designs on all Frankland. Ebroin defeated the Austrasians at Lucofao (Bois-du-Fay, near Laon) and came close to uniting all the Franks under his rule; however, he was assassinated in 681, the victim of a combined attack by his numerous enemies. Pepin immediately made peace with his successor, Waratton.

"However, Waratton's successor, Berthar, and the Neustrian king Theuderic III, who, since 679, was nominal king of all the Franks, made war on Austrasia. The king and his mayor were decisively defeated at the Battle of Tertry (Textrice) in the Vermandois in 687. Berthar and Theuderic withdrew themselves to Paris, where Pepin followed and eventually forced on them a peace treaty with the condition that Berthar leave his office. Pepin was created mayor in all three Frankish kingdoms (Austrasia, Neustria, and Burgundy) and began calling himself Duke and Prince of the Franks (dux et princeps Francorum). In the ensuing quarrels, Berthar killed his mother-in-law Ans fled and fled. His wife Anstrude married Pepin's eldest son Drogo, Duke of Champagne, and Pepin's place in Neustria was secured.

"Over the next several years, Pepin subdued the Alemanni, Frisians, and Franconians, bringing them within the Frankish sphere of influence. He also began the evangelisation of Germany. In 695, he placed Drogo in the Burgundian mayorship and his other son, Grimoald, in the Neustrian one.

"Around 670, Pepin had married Plectrude, who had inherited substantial estates in the Moselle region. She was the mother of Drogo of Champagne and Grimoald, both of whom died before their father. However, Pepin also had a mistress named Alpaide (or Chalpaide) who bore him two more sons: Charles and Childebrand. Just before Pepin's death, Plectrude convinced him to disinherit his bastards in favour of his grandson, Theudoald, the son of

Ancestors of "James V" James

Grimoald, who was still young (and amenable to Plectrude's control). Pepin died suddenly at an old age on 16 December 714, at Jupille (in modern Belgium). His legitimate grandchildren claimed themselves to be Pepin's true successors and, with the help of Plectrude, tried to maintain the position of mayor of the palace after Pepin's death. However, Charles had gained favor among the Austrasians, primarily for his military prowess and ability to keep them well supplied with booty from his conquests. Despite the efforts of Plectrude to silence her rival's child by imprisoning him, he became the sole mayor of the palace -- and de facto ruler of Francia -- after a civil war which lasted for more than three years after Pepin's death."

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pepin_of_Herstal

* Oman, Charles. *The Dark Ages 476-918*. London: Rivingtons, 1914.

* Wallace-Hadrill, J. M., translator. *The Fourth Book of the Chronicle of Fredegar with its Continuations*. Connecticut: Greenwood Press, 1960.

* Bachrach, Bernard S., translator. *Liber Historiae Francorum*. 1973.

Ceolwald (son of Cutha and UNNAMED) was born in 622 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 626 AD.

Notes for Ceolwald:

St Deusdedit I began his reign as Catholic Pope on October 19, 625 AD.

Source: <http://www.scopesys.com/cgi-bin/today2.cgi>

"Pepin II of Herista" Pipin (son of Ansegisel and "Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant) was born in 643 AD in Austrasia, France. He died on Dec 16, 714 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Alpaide Chalpaide**.

Alpaide Chalpaide was born in 657 AD in Paris, France. She died in 692 AD in Austrasia, France.

Notes for "Pepin II of Herista" Pipin:

Pipin was the 14th great grandfather of the husband of 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of my seventh great grandmother, Alice Carpenter.

"Pepin (also Pippin, Pipin, or Peppin) of Herstal (c. 635 ? 16 December 714) was the Mayor of the Palace of Austrasia from 680 to his death and of Neustria and Burgundy from 687 to 695. He was also the first mayor of the palace to "reign" as Duke and Prince of the Franks and he by far overshadowed the Merovingian rois fain Éants.

"Pepin, sometimes called Pepin II and Pepin the Middle was the grandson and namesake of Pepin I the Elder by the marriage of Pepin's daughter, Begga, and Ansegisel, son of Arnulf of Metz. That marriage, united the two houses of the Pippinids and the Arnulfings which, created what would be called the Carolingian dynasty. , Pepin II was, probably born in Herstal (HÉristal), modern Belgium (where his centre, of power lay), whence his by, name (sometimes "of Herstal").

"As mayor of Austrasia, Pepin and Martin, the duke of Laon, fought the Neustrian mayor Ebroin, who had designs on all Frankland. Ebroin defeated the Austrasians at Lucofao (Bois-du-Fay, near Laon) and came close to uniting all the Franks under his rule; however, he was assassinated in 681, the victim of a combined attack by his numerous enemies. Pepin immediately made peace with his successor, Waratton.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"However, Waratton's successor, Berthar, and the Neustrian king Theuderic III, who, since 679, was nominal king of all the Franks, made war on Austrasia. The king and his mayor were decisively defeated at the Battle of Tertry (Textrice) in the Vermandois in 687. Berthar and Theuderic withdrew themselves to Paris, where Pepin followed and eventually forced on them a peace treaty with the condition that Berthar leave his office. Pepin was created mayor in all three Frankish kingdoms (Austrasia, Neustria, and Burgundy) and began calling himself Duke and Prince of the Franks (dux et princeps Francorum). In the ensuing quarrels, Berthar killed his mother-in-law Ans fled and fled. His wife Anstrude married Pepin's eldest son Drogo, Duke of Champagne, and Pepin's place in Neustria was secured.

"Over the next several years, Pepin subdued the Alemanni, Frisians, and Franconians, bringing them within the Frankish sphere of influence. He also began the evangelisation of Germany. In 695, he placed Drogo in the Burgundian mayorship and his other son, Grimoald, in the Neustrian one.

"Around 670, Pepin had married Plectrude, who had inherited substantial estates in the Moselle region. She was the mother of Drogo of Champagne and Grimoald, both of whom died before their father. However, Pepin also had a mistress named Alpaida (or Chalpaida) who bore him two more sons: Charles and Childebrand. Just before Pepin's death, Plectrude convinced him to disinherit his bastards in favour of his grandson, Theudoald, the son of Grimoald, who was still young (and amenable to Plectrude's control). Pepin died suddenly at an old age on 16 December 714, at Jupille (in modern Belgium). His legitimate grandchildren claimed themselves to be Pepin's true successors and, with the help of Plectrude, tried to maintain the position of mayor of the palace after Pepin's death. However, Charles had gained favor among the Austrasians, primarily for his military prowess and ability to keep them well supplied with booty from his conquests. Despite the efforts of Plectrude to silence her rival's child by imprisoning him, he became the sole mayor of the palace -- and de facto ruler of Francia -- after a civil war which lasted for more than three years after Pepin's death."

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pepin_of_Herstal

* Oman, Charles. *The Dark Ages 476-918*. London: Rivingtons, 1914.

* Wallace-Hadrill, J. M., translator. *The Fourth Book of the Chronicle of Fredegar with its Continuations*. Connecticut: Greenwood Press, 1960.

* Bachrach, Bernard S., translator. *Liber Historiae Francorum*. 1973.

Ceolwald (son of Cutha and UNNAMED) was born in 622 AD. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 626 AD.

Notes for Ceolwald:

St Deusdedit I began his reign as Catholic Pope on October 19, 625 AD.

Source: <http://www.scopesys.com/cgi-bin/today2.cgi>

Generation 33

"Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus (son of Ausbert and Bertha) was born in 562 AD in Saxony, Germany. He died in 609 AD in Metz, Germany. He married **Oda** before 584 AD.

Oda was born about 564 AD.

Notes for "Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus:

Arnoldus or Annual (ca 560 ? ca 611), was a Bishop of Metz between 601 and 609 or 611,

Ancestors of "James V" James

the successor of Agilulf, and a Margrave of Schelde. He was the son of Ansbertus, a Senator, and wife Blithilde.

Married before 584 to Oda (?), born ca 564, they were the parents of:

* Saint Itta, married to Pippin of Landen

* Dode or Doda, also called Dode of Metz, Dode of Old Saxony or Dodathe Saxon, who became a nun in 612 at Treves becoming called also Clothilde of Treves, born ca 584, married ca 596 to Arnulf of Metz

Father of St. Arnulf of Metz

It is a subject of much debate among genealogists whether or not Arnoald is the father of Arnulf bishop of Metz, who, according to Christian Settipani's early publications, is a perfect candidate. Settipani contradicts himself in newer publications, stating that Arnulf of Metz couldn't have been Arnoald's son given to no mention of the former having any royal blood. Further speculation indicate Arnulf's father could be a Bodegisel, based on documents from old Frankish legends. This statement is also uncertain. He states instead that Arnoald was Arnulf's father in law.

Ceawlin (son of "Crioda" Cynric) was born in 547 AD. He died in 593 AD.

Ansegisel (son of Arnulf De Heristal and Ode De Heristal) was born in 618 AD in Austrasia, France. He died in 691 AD in Austrasia, France. He married "**Begga**" **St. De Landen-Brabant**.

"Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant (daughter of "Pepin I of Brabant-Landen" Pepin and Itta Idoberg) was born in 624 AD in Landen, Brabant, Belgium. She died on Dec 17, 693 AD in Austrasia, France.

Notes for Ansegisel:

Ansegisel (also Ansgise) (also Ansegus) (also Anchises) (ca 602 or 610 ? murdered before 679 or 662) was the son of Saint Arnulf, bishop of Metz and his wife Saint Doda. He served King Sigbert III of Austrasia (634-656) as a duke (Latin dux, a military leader) and domesticus. He was killed sometime before 679, slain in a feud by his enemy Gundewin.

Marriage and issue

He married sometime after 639 to Saint Begga, the daughter of Pepin of Landen.

They had the following children:

* Pippin II (635 or 640-December 16, 714), mayor of the palace of Austrasia

* Martin, count of Laon

* Clotilda of Heristal (650-699), married King Theodoric III of Neustria

Sources: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ansegisel>

* Les ancêtres de Charlemagne, 1989, Christian Settipani

This biography of a European noble is a stub. You can help Wikipedia by expanding it.

Notes for "Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant:

Saint Begga (also Begue) (615 ? December 17, 693) was the daughter of Pepin of Landen, mayor of the palace of Austrasia, and his wife Itta. On the death of her husband, she took the veil, founded several churches, and built a convent at Andenne on the Meuse River

Ancestors of "James V" James

(Andennesur Meuse) where she spent the rest of her days as abbess.

Some hold that the Beguine movement which came to light in the 12th century was actually founded by St. Begga; and the church in the beguinage of Lier, Belgium, has a statue of St. Begga standing above the inscription: St. Begga, our foundress. The Lier beguinage dates from the 13th century. More than likely, however, the Beguines derived their name from that of the priest Lambert le Begue, under whose protection the witness and ministry of the Beguines flourished.

[edit] Marriage and issue

She married Ansegisel, son of Arnulf, Bishop of Metz, and had three children:

- * Pepin of Heristal
- * Martin of Laon
- * Clotilda of Heristal, who was married to Theuderic III of the Franks

Veneration

She is commemorated as a saint on her feast days, September 6 and December 17.

References: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Begga>

- * Attwater, Donald and Catherine Rachel John. The Penguin Dictionary of Saints. 3rd edition. New York: Penguin Books, 1993. ISBN 0140513124.
- * Les ancêtres de Charlemagne, 1989, Christian Settipani

Cutha (son of Cuthwine and UNNAMED) was born in 600 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 604 AD.

Notes for Cutha:

This Cutha did not rule.

Source: ?Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700, ? seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1

Ansegisel (son of Arnulf De Heristal and Ode De Heristal) was born in 618 AD in Austrasia, France. He died in 691 AD in Austrasia, France. He married "**Begga**" **St. De Landen-Brabant**.

"Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant (daughter of "Pepin I of Brabant-Landen" Pepin and Itta Idoberg) was born in 624 AD in Landen, Brabant, Belgium. She died on Dec 17, 693 AD in Austrasia, France.

Notes for Ansegisel:

Ansegisel (also Ansgise) (also Ansegus) (also Anchises) (ca 602 or 610 ?murdered before 679 or 662) was the son of Saint Arnulf, bishop of Metz and his wife Saint Doda. He served King Sigbert III of Austrasia (634-656) as a duke (Latin dux, a military leader) and domesticus. He was killed sometime before 679, slain in a feud by his enemy Gundewin.

Marriage and issue

Ancestors of "James V" James

He married sometime after 639 to Saint Begga, the daughter of Pepin of Landen.

They had the following children:

- * Pippin II (635 or 640-December 16, 714), mayor of the palace of Austrasia
- * Martin, count of Laon
- * Clotilda of Heristal (650-699), married King Theuderic III of Neustria

Sources: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ansegisel>

- * Les ancêtres de Charlemagne, 1989, Christian Settipani

This biography of a European noble is a stub. You can help Wikipedia by expanding it.

Notes for "Begga" St. De Landen-Brabant:

Saint Begga (also Begue) (615 ? December 17, 693) was the daughter of Pepin of Landen, mayor of the palace of Austrasia, and his wife Itta. On the death of her husband, she took the veil, founded several churches, and built a convent at Andenne on the Meuse River (Andennesur Meuse) where she spent the rest of her days as abbess.

Some hold that the Beguine movement which came to light in the 12th century was actually founded by St. Begga; and the church in the beguinage of Lier, Belgium, has a statue of St. Begga standing above the inscription: St. Begga, our foundress. The Lier beguinage dates from the 13th century. More than likely, however, the Beguines derived their name from that of the priest Lambert le Begue, under whose protection the witness and ministry of the Beguines flourished.

[edit] Marriage and issue

She married Ansegisel, son of Arnulf, Bishop of Metz, and had three children:

- * Pepin of Heristal
- * Martin of Laon
- * Clotilda of Heristal, who was married to Theuderic III of the Franks

Veneration

She is commemorated as a saint on her feast days, September 6 and December 17.

References: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Begga>

- * Attwater, Donald and Catherine Rachel John. The Penguin Dictionary of Saints. 3rd edition. New York: Penguin Books, 1993. ISBN 0140513124.
- * Les ancêtres de Charlemagne, 1989, Christian Settipani

Cutha (son of Cuthwine and UNNAMED) was born in 600 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 604 AD.

Notes for Cutha:

This Cutha did not rule.

Source: ? Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700, ? seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1

Ancestors of "James V" James

Generation 34

107 **Ausbert** (son of Charibert and Ingoberge) was born in 536 AD in Old Saxony, Germany. He
592 died in 585 AD in Metz, Germany. He married **Bertha**.
499
2.

107 **Bertha** was born in 541 AD in Paris, Seine, France. She died in 580 AD in Paris, Seine,
592 France.
499
3.

107 **"Crioda" Cynric** (son of Cerdic and UNNAMED) was born in 495 AD. He died in 560 AD.
741
184
0.

Arnulf De Heristal (son of "Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus and Oda) was born in 582 AD in Metz, Austrasia, France. He died on Aug 16, 640 AD in Metz, Austrasia, France. He married **Ode De Heristal** about 596 AD.

Ode De Heristal was born in 586 AD in Saxony, France. She died in 645 AD in Austrasia, France.

Notes for Arnulf De Heristal:

Saint Arnulf of Metz was born of an important Frankish family at an uncertain date around 582. In his younger years he was called to the Merovingian court to serve king Theudebert II (595-612) of Austrasia and as dux at the Scheldt. Later he became bishop of Metz. During his life he was attracted to religious life and he retired as a monk. After his death he was canonized as a saint. In the French language he is also known as Arnoul or Arnoulf.

Arnulf gave distinguished service at the Austrasian court under Theudebert II. After the death of Theudebert in 612 he was made bishop of Metz. The rule of Austrasia came into the hands of Brunhilda, the grandmother of Theudebert, who ruled also in Burgundy in the name of her great-grandchildren. In 613 Arnulf joined his politics with Pippin of Landen and led the opposition of Frankish nobles against Queen Brunhilda. The revolt led to her overthrow, torture, and eventual execution, and the subsequent reunification of Frankish lands under Chlothachar II.

Chlothachar later made his son Dagobert I king of Austrasia and he ruled with the help of his advisor Arnulf. Not satisfied with his position, as a bishop he was involved in the murder of Chrodoald in 624, an important leader of the Frankish Agilolfings-family and a protégé of Dagobert.

From 623 (with Pippin of Landen, then the Mayor of the Palace), Arnulf was an adviser to Dagobert I. He retired around 628 to a hermitage at a mountain site in the Vosges, to realize his lifelong resolution to become a monk and a hermit. His friend Romaric, whose parents were killed by Brunhilda, had preceded him to the mountains and together with Amatus had already established Remiremont Abbey there. Arnulf settled there, and remained there until his death twelve years later.

Arnulf was canonized as a saint by the Roman Catholic Church. In iconography, he is portrayed with a rake in his hand and is often confused in legend with Arnold of Soissons, who is a patron saint of brewing.

Shortly after 800, most likely in Metz, a brief genealogy of the Carolingians was compiled,

Ancestors of "James V" James

modelled in style after the genealogy of Jesus in the New Testament. According to this source, Arnulf's father was a certain Arnoald, who in turn was the son of a nobilissimus Ansbert and Blithilt (or Blithilde), an alleged and otherwise unattested daughter of Chlothar I. This late attribution of royal Merovingian descent at a time when the Carolingian dynasty was at the peak of its power contrasts clearly with the contemporary *Vita Sancti Arnulfi*'s failure to mention any such a connection: The *Vita*, written shortly after the saint's death, merely states that he was of Francish ancestry, from "sufficiently elevated and noble parentage, and very rich in worldly goods"[1], without making any claims to royal blood. While modern historians generally dismiss the later Carolingian genealogy as spurious[2], it constitutes an important link in Christian Settapani's suggested line of descent from antiquity via Flavius Afranius Syagrius.

Arnulf was married ca 596 to a woman who later sources give the name of Dode or Doda, born ca 584 and daughter of Arnoald and wife Oda (?), and had children. Chlodulf of Metz was his oldest son, but more important is his second son Ansegisel, who married Begga daughter of Pepin I, Pippin of Landen.

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arnulf_of_Metz

1. ^ *Vita Arnulfi* c. 1, MG. SS. rer. Merov. 2, p. 432.
2. ^ Cf. R. Schieffer, *Die Karolinger*, Verlag W. Kohlhammer, Stuttgart/ Berlin / Köln, 2nd ed., 1997.

* Alban Butler's *Lives of the Saints*, edited, revised and supplemented by Thurston and Attwater. Christian Classics, Westminster, Maryland.

* Christian Settapani - *La Préhistoire des Capétiens*, Première Partie.

"Pepin I of Brabant-Landen" Pepin was born in 585 AD in Austrasia, France. He died in 647 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Itta Idoberg**.

Itta Idoberg was born in 598 AD. She died in 642 AD.

Cuthwine (son of Ceawlin) was born in 564 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 568 AD.

Notes for Cuthwine:

King Cuthwine and his father, Ceawlin, joined forces in fighting the Britons in 577. They slew three kings and took the three cities of Gloucester, Cirencester and Bath. King Cuthwine was killed in battle in 584.

Source: *Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700*, seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1

That death date is subject to question, as the record we have of his three children all were born after 584. We suspect the death date is premature.

Arnulf De Heristal (son of "Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus and Oda) was born in 582 AD in Metz, Austrasia, France. He died on Aug 16, 640 AD in Metz, Austrasia, France. He married **Ode De Heristal** about 596 AD.

Ode De Heristal was born in 586 AD in Saxony, France. She died in 645 AD in Austrasia, France.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Notes for Arnulf De Heristal:

Saint Arnulf of Metz was born of an important Frankish family at an uncertain date around 582. In his younger years he was called to the Merovingian court to serve king Theudebert II (595-612) of Austrasia and as dux at the Scheldt. Later he became bishop of Metz. During his life he was attracted to religious life and he retired as a monk. After his death he was canonized as a saint. In the French language he is also known as Arnoul or Arnoulf.

Arnulf gave distinguished service at the Austrasian court under Theudebert II. After the death of Theudebert in 612 he was made bishop of Metz. The rule of Austrasia came into the hands of Brunhilda, the grandmother of Theudebert, who ruled also in Burgundy in the name of her great-grandchildren. In 613 Arnulf joined his politics with Pippin of Landen and led the opposition of Frankish nobles against Queen Brunhilda. The revolt led to her overthrow, torture, and eventual execution, and the subsequent reunification of Frankish lands under Chlothachar II.

Chlothachar later made his son Dagobert I king of Austrasia and he ruled with the help of his advisor Arnulf. Not satisfied with his position, as a bishop he was involved in the murder of Chrodoald in 624, an important leader of the Frankish Agilolfings-family and a protégé of Dagobert.

From 623 (with Pippin of Landen, then the Mayor of the Palace), Arnulf was an adviser to Dagobert I. He retired around 628 to a hermitage at a mountain site in the Vosges, to realize his lifelong resolution to become a monk and a hermit. His friend Romaric, whose parents were killed by Brunhilda, had preceded him to the mountains and together with Amatus had already established Remiremont Abbey there. Arnulf settled there, and remained there until his death twelve years later.

Arnulf was canonized as a saint by the Roman Catholic Church. In iconography, he is portrayed with a rake in his hand and is often confused in legend with Arnold of Soissons, who is a patron saint of brewing.

Shortly after 800, most likely in Metz, a brief genealogy of the Carolingians was compiled, modeled in style after the genealogy of Jesus in the New Testament. According to this source, Arnulf's father was a certain Arnoald, who in turn was the son of a nobilissimus Ansbert and Blithilt (or Blithilde), an alleged and otherwise unattested daughter of Chlothar I. This late attribution of royal Merovingian descent at a time when the Carolingian dynasty was at the peak of its power contrasts clearly with the contemporary *Vita Sancti Arnulfi*'s failure to mention any such a connection: The *Vita*, written shortly after the saint's death, merely states that he was of Frankish ancestry, from "sufficiently elevated and noble parentage, and very rich in worldly goods"[1], without making any claims to royal blood. While modern historians generally dismiss the later Carolingian genealogy as spurious[2], it constitutes an important link in Christian Settiani's suggested line of descent from antiquity via Flavius Afranius Syagrius.

Arnulf was married ca 596 to a woman who later sources give the name of Dode or Doda, born ca 584 and daughter of Arnoald and wife Oda (?), and had children. Chlodulf of Metz was his oldest son, but more important is his second son Ansegisel, who married Begga daughter of Pepin I, Pippin of Landen.

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arnulf_of_Metz

1. ^ *Vita Arnulfi* c. 1, MG. SS. rer. Merov. 2, p. 432.
2. ^ Cf. R. Schieffer, *Die Karolinger*, Verlag W. Kohlhammer, Stuttgart/ Berlin / Köln, 2nd ed., 1997.

* Alban Butler's *Lives of the Saints*, edited, revised and supplemented by Thurston and Attwater. Christian Classics, Westminster, Maryland.

* Christian Settiani - *La Préhistoire des Capétiens*, Première Partie.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"Pepin I of Brabant-Landen" Pepin was born in 585 AD in Austrasia, France. He died in 647 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Itta Idoberg**.

Itta Idoberg was born in 598 AD. She died in 642 AD.

Cuthwine (son of Ceawlin) was born in 564 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 568 AD.

Notes for Cuthwine:

King Cuthwine and his father, Ceawlin, joined forces in fighting the Britons in 577. They slew three kings and took the three cities of Gloucester, Cirencester and Bath. King Cuthwine was killed in battle in 584.

Source: ?Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700, ? seventh edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, additions and Corrections by Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Baltimore, Maryland, 1992, Library of Congress Card #92-73801, ISBN 0-8063-1367-6, Page 1

That death date is subject to question, as the record we have of his three children all were born after 584. We suspect the death date is premature.

Generation 35

Charibert (son of Clotarie and "Ingund of Soissons" Ingund) was born in 520 AD in Paris, Seine, France. He died on May 07, 567 AD in France. He married **Ingoberge**.

Ingoberge was born in 520 AD. She died in 589 AD.

Cerdic (son of Elesa and UNNAMED) was born in 467 AD in Ancient Saxony, Northern Germany. He died in 534 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 471 AD.

Notes for Cerdic:

King Cerdic is the 50th great grandfather of my son-in-law, Steven Odis Westmoreland. King Cerdic is the 37th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, who is the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. Southworth is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. My daughter and son-in-law were related prior to their marriage. Tiffany Lenn Sharpe and Steven O. Westmoreland are 34th cousins, four times removed.

It was said that Cerdic and his son, Cynric, came into Britain on five ships about 495 AD. They were one of those many nomadic Germanic tribes of people whose barbarian savagery and rough manner of life struck terror in the hearts of many peoples wherever they were attacked across Europe. He was a Saxon earldorman who founded a settlement on the coast of what became known as Hampshire, England.

By the time Cerdic was born, according to tradition, St. Patrick, the patron saint of Ireland, may have already died in Saul, Ireland on March 17, 461 or maybe as late as 493.

Source: <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/11554a.htm>

Cerdic was recognized as King of the West Saxons in 519, and reigned until 534. In 534,

Ancestors of "James V" James

Cerdic's forces conquered the Isle of Wight. Later in this year was when Cerdic died.

We all have heard of the illusive King Arthur of England. It is impossible to pinpoint who he was or exactly when he, if he was one person and not an embodiment of several heroes Kings, ruled English landsides. However, the time of Cerdic's arrival is right in the timespan when many believe King Arthur was roving the land.

(Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/arthur1.html>)

"Cerdic, a patriarch of royalty in Saxony, landed in Hampshire in 495 and in 519 gained a victory at Charford. He was first crowned King of the West Saxons, when, as it is reported, the legendary King Arthur, who had his castle on the steep coast of Cornwall, yielded to him this section of land now known as Hampshire and Somerset. In 520, being unable to extend his rule west of the Avon and defeated at Badbury, County Dorset, Cerdic withdrew. Ten years later he conquered the Isle of Wight. He died in 534. Cerdic is said to be the founding figure of the West Saxon dynasty. However, much of this is obscure and not documented, subject to dispute by history scholars. There was no secure chronicle in the 6th century. (Wurts)"

Source: <http://www.mathematical.com/cerdic.html>

134 **"Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus** (son of Ausbert and Bertha) was born in 562 AD in
326 Saxony, Germany. He died in 609 AD in Metz, Germany. He married **Oda** before 584 AD.
886
4.

134 **Oda** was born about 564 AD.

326 Notes for "Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus:
886
5.

Arnoldus or Arnulf (ca 560 ? ca 611), was a Bishop of Metz between 601 and 609 or 611, the successor of Agilulf, and a Margrave of Schelde. He was the son of Ansbertus, a Senator, and wife Blithilde.

Married before 584 to Oda (?), born ca 564, they were the parents of:

* Saint Itta, married to Pippin of Landen

* Dode or Doda, also called Dode of Metz, Dode of Old Saxony or Doda the Saxon, who became a nun in 612 at Treves becoming called also Clothilde of Treves, born ca 584, married ca 596 to Arnulf of Metz

Father of St. Arnulf of Metz

It is a subject of much debate among genealogists whether or not Arnoald is the father of Arnulf bishop of Metz, who, according to Christian Settipani's early publications, is a perfect candidate. Settipani contradicts himself in newer publications, stating that Arnulf of Metz couldn't have been Arnoald's son given to no mention of the former having any royal blood. Further speculation indicate Arnulf's father could be a Bodegisel, based on documents from old Frankish legends. This statement is also uncertain. He states instead that Arnoald was Arnulf's father in law.

134 **Ceawlin** (son of "Crioda" Cynric) was born in 547 AD. He died in 593 AD.
401
228
8.

188 **"Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus** (son of Ausbert and Bertha) was born in 562 AD in
013 Saxony, Germany. He died in 609 AD in Metz, Germany. He married **Oda** before 584 AD.

Ancestors of "James V" James

977
6.

188 **Oda** was born about 564 AD.

013

977 Notes for "Arnoldus of Austrasia" Arnoldus:

7.

Arnoldus or Arnual (ca 560 ? ca 611), was a Bishop of Metz between 601 and 609 or 611, the successor of Agilulf, and a Margrave of Schelde. He was the son of Ansbertus, a Senator, and wife Blithilde.

Married before 584 to Oda (?), born ca 564, they were the parents of:

* Saint Itta, married to Pippin of Landen

* Dode or Doda, also called Dode of Metz, Dode of Old Saxony or Doda the Saxon, who became a nun in 612 at Treves becoming called also Clothilde of Treves, born ca 584, married ca 596 to Arnulf of Metz

Father of St. Arnulf of Metz

It is a subject of much debate among genealogists whether or not Arnoald is the father of Arnulf bishop of Metz, who, according to Christian Settipani's early publications, is a perfect candidate. Settipani contradicts himself in newer publications, stating that Arnulf of Metz couldn't have been Arnoald's son given to no mention of the former having any royal blood. Further speculation indicate Arnulf's father could be a Bodegisel, based on documents from old Frankish legends. This statement is also uncertain. He states instead that Arnoald was Arnulf's father in law.

188 **Ceawlin** (son of "Crioda" Cynric) was born in 547 AD. He died in 593 AD.

088

320

0.

Generation 36

873 **Clotarie** (son of Clovis and St. Clotilde) was born in 495 AD in Rheims, Marne, Lorraine,
267 France. He died on Nov 23, 561 AD in Braines, Lorraine, France. He married "**Ingund of**
2. **Soissons" Ingund**.

873 "**Ingund of Soissons" Ingund** was born in 494 AD. She died in 563 AD.

267

3.

146 **Elesa** (son of Esla) was born in 439 AD in Ancient Saxony, Northern Germany. He married
800 **UNNAMED**.

64.

146 **UNNAMED** was born in 443 AD.

800

65.

Ausbert (son of Charibert and Ingoberge) was born in 536 AD in Old Saxony, Germany. He died in 585 AD in Metz, Germany. He married **Bertha**.

Bertha was born in 541 AD in Paris, Seine, France. She died in 580 AD in Paris, Seine, France.

Ancestors of "James V" James

"Crioda" Cynric (son of Cerdic and UNNAMED) was born in 495 AD. He died in 560 AD.

Ausbert (son of Charibert and Ingoberge) was born in 536 AD in Old Saxony, Germany. He died in 585 AD in Metz, Germany. He married **Bertha**.

Bertha was born in 541 AD in Paris, Seine, France. She died in 580 AD in Paris, Seine, France.

"Crioda" Cynric (son of Cerdic and UNNAMED) was born in 495 AD. He died in 560 AD.

Generation 37

174 **Clovis** (son of Childeric and Basina) was born in 466 AD in France. He died on Nov 27, 511
653 AD in Paris, France. He married **St. Clotilde**.
44.

174 **St. Clotilde** was born in 475 AD in Burgandy, France. She died in 550 AD in Burgandy,
653 France.
45.

293 **Esla** (son of Cewis) was born in 411 AD.
601
28.

107 **Charibert** (son of Clotarie and "Ingund of Soissons" Ingund) was born in 520 AD in Paris,
810 Seine, France. He died on May 07, 567 AD in France. He married **Ingoberge**.
816
0.

107 **Ingoberge** was born in 520 AD. She died in 589 AD.
810
816
1.

108 **Cerdic** (son of Elesa and UNNAMED) was born in 467 AD in Ancient Saxony, Northern
108 Germany. He died in 534 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.
185
6.

108 **UNNAMED** was born in 471 AD.

108
185 Notes for Cerdic:
7.

King Cerdic is the 50th great grandfather of my son-in-law, StevenOdis Westmoreland. King Cerdic is the 37th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, who is the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. Southworth is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. My daughter and son-in-law were related prior to their marriage. Tiffany Lenn Sharpe and Steven O. Westmoreland are 34th cousins, four times removed.

It was said that Cerdic and his son, Cynric, came into Britain on five ships about 495 AD. They were one of those many nomadic Germanic tribes of people whose barbarian savagery and rough manner of life struck terror in the hearts of many peoples wherever they were attacked across Europe. He was a Saxon earldorman who founded a settlement on the coast of what became known as Hampshire, England.

By the time Cerdic was born, according to tradition, St. Patrick, the patron saint of Ireland,

Ancestors of "James V" James

may have already died in Saul, Ireland on March 17, 461 or maybe as late as 493.

Source: <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/11554a.htm>

Cerdic was recognized as King of the West Saxons in 519, and reigned until 534. In 534, Cerdic's forces conquered the Isle of Wight. Later in this year was when Cerdic died.

We all have heard of the illusive King Arthur of England. It is impossible to pinpoint who he was or exactly when he, if he was one person and not an embodiment of several heroes, ruled English landsides. However, the time of Cerdic's arrival is right in the timespan when many believe King Arthur was roving the land.

(Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/arthur1.html>)

"Cerdic, a patriarch of royalty in Saxony, landed in Hampshire in 495 and in 519 gained a victory at Charford. He was first crowned King of the West Saxons, when, as it is reported, the legendary King Arthur, who had his castle on the steep coast of Cornwall, yielded to him this section of land now known as Hampshire and Somerset. In 520, being unable to extend his rule west of the Avon and defeated at Badbury, County Dorset, Cerdic withdrew. Ten years later he conquered the Isle of Wight. He died in 534. Cerdic is said to be the founding figure of the West Saxon dynasty. However, much of this is obscure and not documented, subject to dispute by history scholars. There was no secure chronicle in the 6th century. (Wurts)"

Source: <http://www.mathematical.com/cerdic.html>

Charibert (son of Clotarie and "Ingund of Soissons" Ingund) was born in 520 AD in Paris, Seine, France. He died on May 07, 567 AD in France. He married **Ingoberge**.

Ingoberge was born in 520 AD. She died in 589 AD.

Cerdic (son of Elesa and UNNAMED) was born in 467 AD in Ancient Saxony, Northern Germany. He died in 534 AD in Wessex, England. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 471 AD.

Notes for Cerdic:

King Cerdic is the 50th great grandfather of my son-in-law, Steven Odis Westmoreland. King Cerdic is the 37th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, who is the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. Southworth is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. My daughter and son-in-law were related prior to their marriage. Tiffany Lenn Sharpe and Steven O. Westmoreland are 34th cousins, four times removed.

It was said that Cerdic and his son, Cynric, came into Britain on five ships about 495 AD. They were one of those many nomadic Germanic tribes of people whose barbarian savagery and rough manner of life struck terror in the hearts of many peoples wherever they were attacked across Europe. He was a Saxon earldorman who founded a settlement on the coast of what became known as Hampshire, England.

By the time Cerdic was born, according to tradition, St. Patrick, the patron saint of Ireland, may have already died in Saul, Ireland on March 17, 461 or maybe as late as 493.

Source: <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/11554a.htm>

Cerdic was recognized as King of the West Saxons in 519, and reigned until 534. In 534, Cerdic's forces conquered the Isle of Wight. Later in this year was when Cerdic died.

Ancestors of "James V" James

We all have heard of the illusive King Author of England. It is impossible to pinpoint who he was or exactly when he, if he was one person and not an embodiment of several heroes Kings, ruled English landsides. However, the time of Cerdic's arrival is right in the timespan when many believe King Arthur was roving the land.

(Source: <http://www.britannia.com/history/arthur1.html>)

"Cerdic, a patriarch of royalty in Saxony, landed in Hampshire in 495 and in 519 gained a victory at Charford. He was first crowned King of the West Saxons, when, as it is reported, the legendary King Arthur, who had his castle on the steep coast of Cornwall, yielded to him this section of land now known as Hampshire and Somerset. In 520, being unable to extend his rule west of the Avon and defeated at Badbury County Dorset, Cedric withdrew. Ten years later he conquered the Isle of Wight. He died in 534. Cerdic is said to be the founding figure of the West Saxon dynasty. However, much of this is obscure and not documented, subject to dispute by history scholars. There was no secure chronicle in the 6th century. (Wurts)"

Source: <http://www.mathematical.com/cerdic.html>

Generation 38

349 **Childeric** (son of Meroveus and Verica) was born in 436 AD in Germany. He died on Nov
306 26, 481 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Basina**.
88.

349 **Basina** was born in 440 AD in Thuringia, Germany. She died in 487 AD in Austrasia,
306 France.
89.

587 **Cewis** (son of Wig) was born in 383 AD.
202
56.

Clotarie (son of Clovis and St. Clotilde) was born in 495 AD in Rheims, Marne, Lorraine, France. He died on Nov 23, 561 AD in Braines, Lorraine, France. He married "**Ingund of Soissons**" **Ingund**.

"**Ingund of Soissons**" **Ingund** was born in 494 AD. She died in 563 AD.

Elesa (son of Esla) was born in 439 AD in Ancient Saxony, Northern Germany. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 443 AD.

Clotarie (son of Clovis and St. Clotilde) was born in 495 AD in Rheims, Marne, Lorraine, France. He died on Nov 23, 561 AD in Braines, Lorraine, France. He married "**Ingund of Soissons**" **Ingund**.

"**Ingund of Soissons**" **Ingund** was born in 494 AD. She died in 563 AD.

Elesa (son of Esla) was born in 439 AD in Ancient Saxony, Northern Germany. He married **UNNAMED**.

UNNAMED was born in 443 AD.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Generation 39

698 **Meroveus** (son of "Chlodio of Tournai" Chlodio and Basina) was born in 415 AD in
613 Germany. He died in 458 AD in Upper Rhine River Valley, Germany. He married **Verica**.
76.

698 **Verica** was born in 419 AD in Westphalia, Germany. She died in 460 AD in Thuringia,
613 Germany.
77.

117 **Wig** (son of Freawine) was born in 355 AD.
440
512.

174 **Clovis** (son of Childeric and Basina) was born in 466 AD in France. He died on Nov 27, 511
653 AD in Paris, France. He married **St. Clotilde**.
44.

174 **St. Clotilde** was born in 475 AD in Burgandy, France. She died in 550 AD in Burgandy,
653 France.
45.

293 **Esla** (son of Cewis) was born in 411 AD.
601
28.

174 **Clovis** (son of Childeric and Basina) was born in 466 AD in France. He died on Nov 27, 511
653 AD in Paris, France. He married **St. Clotilde**.
44.

174 **St. Clotilde** was born in 475 AD in Burgandy, France. She died in 550 AD in Burgandy,
653 France.
45.

293 **Esla** (son of Cewis) was born in 411 AD.
601
28.

Generation 40

139 **"Chlodio of Tournai" Chlodio** (son of Paramund and Argotta) was born about 395 AD in
722 Rhine River Valley, Germany. He died in 447 AD in Moselle, France. He married **Basina**.
752.

139 **Basina** was born in 398 AD in Thuringia, Germany. She died in 452 AD in Thuringia,
722 Germany.
753.

234 **Freawine** (son of Frithogar) was born in 327 AD.
881
024.

349 **Childeric** (son of Meroveus and Verica) was born in 436 AD in Germanky. He died on Nov
306 26, 481 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Basina**.
88.

Ancestors of "James V" James

349 **Basina** was born in 440 AD in Thuringia, Germany. She died in 487 AD in Austrasia,
306 France.
89.

587 **Cewis** (son of Wig) was born in 383 AD.
202
56.

349 **Childeric** (son of Meroveus and Verica) was born in 436 AD in Germanky. He died on Nov
306 26, 481 AD in Austrasia, France. He married **Basina**.
88.

349 **Basina** was born in 440 AD in Thuringia, Germany. She died in 487 AD in Austrasia,
306 France.
89.

587 **Cewis** (son of Wig) was born in 383 AD.
202
56.

Generation 41

279 **Paramund** was born in 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died in 430 AD in Rhine River
445 Valley, Germany. He married **Argotta**.
504.

279 **Argotta** (daughter of Genobaud) was born in 376 AD in France. She died in 432 AD in
445 Rhine River Valley, Germany.
505.

Notes for Paramund:

Paramund was born about 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died about 430 AD at Rhine River Valley, Germany.

Paramund is the 25th great grandfather of Louis, husband of Eleanor of Aquitaine (1123-1204), the 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of Alice Carpenter, my 7th great grandmother.

What is the significance of following this line? First of all, he is a link through which descendants flow through the Westmoreland family into which our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland married when she married Steve O. Westmoreland. Tiffany's mother-in-law, Betty Katherine Covington Westmoreland, generously provided for me most of this genealogical information, and my appreciation of her is great for that. There are some interesting people in that line. Here are the interesting people in that line.

This descendants' line from Paramund of Germany contains 59 generations coming down to our contemporary family, down to our Westmoreland grandchildren. This line comes through our son-in-law's connections.

Notable names most people may recognize include Charles "The Hammer" Martel (686-741), Mayor of the Palace, ruling the Franks, and best remembered winning the Battle of Tours in 732, a battle that halted the Islamic expansion in Europe at that time.

William the Conqueror is best known for leading the Normans from France across the English Channel to conquer England and to have himself crowned King of England in 1066.

Ancestors of "James V" James

King John of Lackland (1167-1216), thought to be one of the worst monarchs of England, is first of three generations of Kings who issued a total of 17 versions of documents of governance that became known as the Magna Carta. Those kings were him, his son, King Henry III (1207-1272), and his grandson, King Edward I (1239-1307). The essence of the Magna Carta were these kings agreeing, under political pressure, to relent from the practice of the King having the only "say" in matters of government, and that the "people" had a say in certain matters. These "people" were the Barons who would be similar in function to a legislature or what we would perceive as our U.S. Congress.

Infamous English King Henry VIII (1491-1547) who had six wives is included. U. S. President Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826) appears in this line. English King George III (1738-1820), who ruled England during the American Revolution. Abigail Smith, a famous American woman who became married to the second President of the United States, John Adams.

English Queen Victoria (1819-1901). Her husband was an also quite famous personality, Prince Albert (1819-1861). At the time of her reign's end, she was the longest reigning English monarch as of that time, a record to be surpassed only by our contemporary Queen Elizabeth II.

The sixth U.S. President, John Quincy Adams (1767-1848), is in this family line. He is the first President whose father also had served as President. This line contains the 12th President of the United States, General Zachary Taylor (1784-1850). This family line also has the 16th U.S. President, Abraham Lincoln.

English King George VI (1895-1952), the father of our current Queen Elizabeth II (born 1926), is there, along with his daughter.

Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882-1945), the 20th President of the United States in in this family.

469 **Frithogar** (son of "Brond" Brand) was born in 299 AD.
762
048.

698 **Meroveus** (son of "Chlodio of Tournai" Chlodio and Basina) was born in 415 AD in
613 Germany. He died in 458 AD in Upper Rhine River Valley, Germany. He married **Verica**.
76.

698 **Verica** was born in 419 AD in Westphalia, Germany. She died in 460 AD in Thuringia,
613 Germany.
77.

117 **Wig** (son of Freawine) was born in 355 AD.
440
512.

Ancestors of "James V" James

698 **Meroveus** (son of "Chlodio of Tournai" Chlodio and Basina) was born in 415 AD in
613 Germany. He died in 458 AD in Upper Rhine River Valley, Germany. He married **Verica**.
76.

698 **Verica** was born in 419 AD in Westphalia, Germany. She died in 460 AD in Thuringia,
613 Germany.
77.

117 **Wig** (son of Freawine) was born in 355 AD.
440
512.

Generation 42

558 **Genobaud** was born in 349 AD in Rhine River Valley, Germany. He died in 419 AD in Rhine
891 River Valley, Germany.
010.

939 **"Brond" Brand** (son of "Balder" Beldeg) was born in 271 AD.
524
096.

139 **"Chlodio of Tournai" Chlodio** (son of Paramund and Argotta) was born about 395 AD in
722 Rhine River Valley, Germany. He died in 447 AD in Moselle, France. He married **Basina**.
752.

139 **Basina** was born in 398 AD in Thuringia, Germany. She died in 452 AD in Thuringia,
722 Germany.
753.

234 **Freawine** (son of Frithogar) was born in 327 AD.
881
024.

139 **"Chlodio of Tournai" Chlodio** (son of Paramund and Argotta) was born about 395 AD in
722 Rhine River Valley, Germany. He died in 447 AD in Moselle, France. He married **Basina**.
752.

139 **Basina** was born in 398 AD in Thuringia, Germany. She died in 452 AD in Thuringia,
722 Germany.
753.

234 **Freawine** (son of Frithogar) was born in 327 AD.
881
024.

Generation 43

187 **"Balder" Beldeg** (son of "Woutan" Odin) was born in 243 AD in Scandinavia.
904
819
2.

279 **Paramund** was born in 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died in 430 AD in Rhine River
445 Valley, Germany. He married **Argotta**.
504.

Ancestors of "James V" James

279 **Argotta** (daughter of Genobaud) was born in 376 AD in France. She died in 432 AD in
445 Rhine River Valley, Germany.
505.

Notes for Paramund:

Paramund was born about 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died about 430 AD at Rhine River Valley, Germany.

Paramund is the 25th great grandfather of Louis, husband of Eleanor of Aquitaine (1123-1204), the 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of Alice Carpenter, my 7th great grandmother.

What is the significance of following this line? First of all, he is a link through which descendants flow through the Westmoreland family into which our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland married when she married Steve O. Westmoreland. Tiffany's mother-in-law, Betty Katherine Covington Westmoreland, generously provided for me most of this genealogical information, and my appreciation of her is great for that. There are some interesting people in that line. Here are the interesting people in that line.

This descendants' line from Paramund of Germany contains 59 generations coming down to our contemporary family, down to our Westmoreland grandchildren. This line comes through our son-in-law's connections.

Notable names most people may recognize include Charles "The Hammer" Martel (686-741), Mayor of the Palace, ruling the Franks, and best remembered winning the Battle of Tours in 732, a battle that halted the Islamic expansion in Europe at that time.

William the Conqueror is best known for leading the Normans from France across the English Channel to conquer England and to have himself crowned King of England in 1066.

King John of Lackland (1167-1216), thought to be one of the worst monarchs of England, is first of three generations of Kings who issued a total of 17 versions of documents of governance that became known as the Magna Carta. Those kings were him, his son, King Henry III (1207-1272), and his grandson, King Edward I (1239-1307). The essence of the Magna Carta were these kings agreeing, under political pressure, to relent from the practice of the King having the only "say" in matters of government, and that the "people" had a say in certain matters. These "people" were the Barons who would be similar in function to a legislature or what we would perceive as our U.S. Congress.

Infamous English King Henry VIII (1491-1547) who had six wives is included. U. S. President Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826) appears in this line. English King George III (1738-1820), who ruled England during the American Revolution. Abigail Smith, a famous American woman who became married to the second President of the United States, John Adams.

English Queen Victoria (1819-1901). Her husband was an also quite famous personality, Prince Albert (1819-1861). At the time of her reign's end, she was the longest reigning English monarch as of that time, a record to be surpassed only by our contemporary Queen Elizabeth II.

The sixth U.S. President, John Quincy Adams (1767-1848), is in this family line. He is the first President whose father also had served as President. This line contains the 12th President of the United States, General Zachary Taylor (1784-1850). This family line also has the 16th U.S. President, Abraham Lincoln.

English King George VI (1895-1952), the father of our current Queen Elizabeth II (born

Ancestors of "James V" James

1926), is there, along with his daughter.

Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882-1945), the 20th President of the United States in in this family.

469 **Frithogar** (son of "Brond" Brand) was born in 299 AD.
762
048.

279 **Paramund** was born in 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died in 430 AD in Rhine River
445 Valley, Germany. He married **Argotta**.
504.

279 **Argotta** (daughter of Genobaud) was born in 376 AD in France. She died in 432 AD in
445 Rhine River Valley, Germany.
505.

Notes for Paramund:

Paramund was born about 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died about 430 AD at Rhine River Valley, Germany.

Paramund is the 25th great grandfather of Louis, husband of Eleanor of Aquitaine (1123-1204), the 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of Alice Carpenter, my 7th great grandmother.

What is the significance of following this line? First of all, he is a link through which descendants flow through the Westmoreland family into which our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland married when she married Steve O. Westmoreland. Tiffany's mother-in-law, Betty Katherine Covington Westmoreland, generously provided for me most of this genealogical information, and my appreciation of her is great for that. There are some interesting people in that line. Here are the interesting people in that line.

This descendants' line from Paramund of Germany contains 59 generations coming down to our contemporary family, down to our Westmoreland grandchildren. This line comes through our son-in-law's connections.

Notable names most people may recognize include Charles "The Hammer" Martel (686-741), Mayor of the Palace, ruling the Franks, and best remembered winning the Battle of Tours in 732, a battle that halted the Islamic expansion in Europe at that time.

William the Conqueror is best known for leading the Normans from France across the English Channel to conquer England and to have himself crowned King of England in 1066.

King John of Lackland (1167-1216), thought to be one of the worst monarchs of England, is first of three generations of Kings who issued a total of 17 versions of documents of governance that became known as the Magna Carta. Those kings were him, his son, King Henry III (1207-1272), and his grandson, King Edward I (1239-1307). The essence of the Magna Carta were these kings agreeing, under political pressure, to relent from the practice

Ancestors of "James V" James

of the King having the only "say" in matters of government, and that the "people" had a say in certain matters. These "people" were the Barons who would be similar in function to a legislature or what we would perceive as our U.S. Congress.

Infamous English King Henry VIII (1491-1547) who had six wives is included. U. S. President Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826) appears in this line. English King George III (1738-1820), who ruled England during the American Revolution. Abigail Smith, a famous American woman who became married to the second President of the United States, John Adams.

English Queen Victoria (1819-1901). Her husband was an also quite famous personality, Prince Albert (1819-1861). At the time of her reign's end, she was the longest reigning English monarch as of that time, a record to be surpassed only by our contemporary Queen Elizabeth II.

The sixth U.S. President, John Quincy Adams (1767-1848), is in this family line. He is the first President whose father also had served as President. This line contains the 12th President of the United States, General Zachary Taylor (1784-1850). This family line also has the 16th U.S. President, Abraham Lincoln.

English King George VI (1895-1952), the father of our current Queen Elizabeth II (born 1926), is there, along with his daughter.

Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882-1945), the 20th President of the United States in in this family.

469 **Frithogar** (son of "Brond" Brand) was born in 299 AD.
762
048.

Generation 44

"Woutan" Odin (son of "Bor" Frithuwald) was born in 215 AD.

558 **Genobaud** was born in 349 AD in Rhine River Valley, Germany. He died in 419 AD in Rhine
891 River Valley, Germany.
010.

939 **"Brond" Brand** (son of "Balder" Beldeg) was born in 271 AD.
524
096.

558 **Genobaud** was born in 349 AD in Rhine River Valley, Germany. He died in 419 AD in Rhine
891 River Valley, Germany.
010.

939 **"Brond" Brand** (son of "Balder" Beldeg) was born in 271 AD.

Ancestors of "James V" James

524
096.

Generation 45

"Bor" Frithuwald (son of Freothalaf and Beltsa) was born in 190 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe.

187 **"Balder" Beldeg** (son of "Woutan" Odin) was born in 243 AD in Scandinavia.
904
819
2.

187 **"Balder" Beldeg** (son of "Woutan" Odin) was born in 243 AD in Scandinavia.
904
819
2.

Generation 46

Freothalaf (son of Fin) was born in 160 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe. He married **Beltsa**.

Beltsa was born in 194 AD.

"Woutan" Odin (son of "Bor" Frithuwald) was born in 215 AD.

"Woutan" Odin (son of "Bor" Frithuwald) was born in 215 AD.

Generation 47

Fin (son of Florwald) was born in 130 AD in Asgard, Asia Or East Europe.

"Bor" Frithuwald (son of Freothalaf and Beltsa) was born in 190 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe.

"Bor" Frithuwald (son of Freothalaf and Beltsa) was born in 190 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe.

Generation 48

Florwald (son of Godwulf) was born in 100 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe.

Freothalaf (son of Fin) was born in 160 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe. He married **Beltsa**.

Beltsa was born in 194 AD.

Freothalaf (son of Fin) was born in 160 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe. He married **Beltsa**.

Beltsa was born in 194 AD.

Ancestors of "James V" James

Generation 49

Godwulf was born about 80 AD. He died about 125 AD.

Fin (son of Florwald) was born in 130 AD in Asgard, Asia Or East Europe.

Fin (son of Florwald) was born in 130 AD in Asgard, Asia Or East Europe.

Generation 50

Florwald (son of Godwulf) was born in 100 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe.

Florwald (son of Godwulf) was born in 100 AD in Asgard, Asia Or, East Europe.

Generation 51

Godwulf was born about 80 AD. He died about 125 AD.

Godwulf was born about 80 AD. He died about 125 AD.

Prepared By:

Preparer: Dwight (D. A.) Albert Sharpe
Phone: 817-504-6508
Email: da@dasharpe.com

Address: 805 Derting Road East
Aurora, TX 76078-3712
USA